GLOBAL COMMODITY FUTURES MARKET MODELLING AND STATISTICAL INFERENCE

by

WEIQING TANG

A thesis submitted to the University of Birmingham
for the degree of DOCTOR OF PHILOSOPHY

Department of Economics

Birmingham Business School

College of Social Science

University of Birmingham

Abstract

This thesis first investigates the asset pricing ability of a new risk factor, namely Risk-Neutral Skewness (estimated based on option data) in the global commodity futures market. Skewness trading behaviour in the option market is attributed to heterogeneous belief and selective hedging concern. The negative (positive) the Risk-Neutral Skewness is accompanied with excess trading on put (call) option contracts, which leads to underlings' over-pricing (under-pricing). Above results are robust to time-series and cross-sectional test and other alternatives.

Secondly, a new functional mean change detection procedure is proposed via the Kolmogorov-Smirnov functional form. Simulations indicate decent testing power under the alternative. An empirical test procedure is deployed for crude oil and gold futures price term structure, showing real market data change. The multivariate forecasting regression analysis uncovers trading behaviours behind the real-world change occurrence.

Lastly, the futures basis term structure is forecasted under the framework of the functional autoregressive predictive factor model with lag 1. By comparison, the new method outperforms other functional and non-functional methods, with maturities less than 10 months. The Model Confidence Set method statistically validate this result. A new variance minimization trading strategy is proposed and tested when the future futures basis is forecast and known.

Acknowledgements

First and foremost, I sincerely appreciate my supervisors, Prof Zhenya Liu and Prof David Dickinson, for their academic guidance and incredible support during my PhD study. Prof Zhenya Liu has introduced me a scientific world of doing research independently, critically and practically. Prof David Dickinson has made great support on my research activities, without his generous help, my research journey will be tougher. My special thanks are for Prof Lajos Horváth from University of Utah who gave me a strong guidance on statistical analysis and the newest statistical theory. Without his patient and considerate instructions, I will not put my thesis in the current standard. Moreover, I would like to take this opportunity to thanks my viva examiners, Dr Pei Kuang and Professor Ana-Maria Fuertes. It is their comments and suggestions making this thesis better and better.

My great appreciation goes to my parents who support me through my whole high degree pursuing. It is their unconditional love that makes me moving forward and challenging further. Additionally, my heartfelt thanks go to my girlfriend, Miss Jingyi Yang, who always trust on me with countless praise on my research. More importantly, it is her accompany lighting the dark road and encouraging me challenge every possibility.

Last, but not least, I am grateful for the financial support from the department of economics, business school, University of Birmingham.

Contents

List of Tables

List of Figures

Chapter 1

Introduction

This chapter firstly pin down the main commonalities across all the following chapters within this thesis, then provide a review on the global commodity futures market research background, both theoretical and empirical studies, and finally discuss the research motivation, research question, contribution, future potential improvements and works.

1.1 Research General Commonality and Framework

The first commonality comes out for organising these three separate chapters are on asset modelling, presented in different methods and perspectives. Generally, spanning across three chapters, global commodity futures modellings are investigated on the basis of: (1) asset return anomaly explanation via asset pricing framework, using multivariate risk factor approach, (2) futures contract price term structure modelling test via the functional project method with projected factors from Dynamic Nelson-Siegel (DNS) framework and (3) futures basis term structure fitting via the functional autoregressive model.

Another close link across these three parts is to understand futures market backwardation and contango: (1) documenting a new risk factor distinct from the term structure basis factor (not explained by the backwardation and contango theory), (2) discussing the term structure price data modelling and instability (market shift between backwardation and contango) and (3) fitting and forecasting the term structure futures basis (market backwardation and contango shape forecast).

Standing on the current literature of global futures market studies' results, chapter two employs a new risk factor, the Risk-Neutral Skewness, to price the global commodity futures market return. This new risk factor shows successfully extraordinary performance and heterogeneity (less correlated with several traditional risk factors), which is distinct from the term structure basis factor and its corresponding theory behind: backwardation and contango. A clear pricing mechanism is also discussed on the basis of a strong theoretical background (option-based buying pressure from heterogeneous belief and selective hedging idea) to support empirical findings. Moreover, in order to provide some practical advantages as to why this new factor matters, the recent literature proposed realised skewness estimator (documented by the cumulative prospect theory) is also included to compare.

Different from single continuous futures data modelling, the third chapter considers more generic case of modelling term structure price data and testing model stability. However, in literature, the current term structure modelling studies mainly depend on the DNS model that is originally created to deal with bond yield curve data. Consequently, chapter three will then explore whether the DNS model is reasonable to accommodate the commodities futures term structure variation. Method used for this analysis is concentrated on statistical data mean change detection, which incorporates DNS model framework. If a mean change is detected on DNS implied factors, which implies that DNS model is statistically not able to adjust data dynamics (mean level) with respect to corresponding samples.

In most cases of mean changes, there are impacts on the term structure slope, indicating the change on market shift between backwardation and contango. Therefore, by implementing this detection procedure, economic intuition for futures market characteristics behind this change are able to be discussed. As to the testing details, a new detection procedure is proposed to handle this change detection under the functional data analysis framework. The results are examined under both simulation and empirical scenarios.

In terms of predicting term structure, the functional autoregressive method is employed in the chapter four, which shows a good property on term structure data fitting and forecasting. The backwardation and contango scenarios, heavily dependent on the shape of term structure curve on the view of data pattern, is also explored and discussed when using the functional autoregressive model.

All current empirical findings and related contributions are summarised in the last chapter. Following the summary, current research limitations and future research possibilities is also discussed.

1.2 Understanding Global Futures Market Modelling

The first question initializing the futures market research is whether the futures market is integrated or segmented with the stock market? Answers for this question is converted to whether CAPM model (Sharpe, 1964; Lintner, 1965 and Mossin, 1966) works in the futures market and whether practical investors can benefit from futures contracts' trading because of portfolio risk diversification (if two assets are segmented). In this sense, the existence of market co-movement between futures and equities, and assets correlation becomes the research point.

Investing and trading in commodity futures become more attractive with a considerable compound return 9.85% from 1950 to 1976, while trading in equity market yields 9.81% annual return (Bodie and Rosansky, 1980). At the same time, the buy-and-hold strategy on the Goldman Sachs Commodity Index (GSCI) has been outperforming the buy-and-hold strategy on S&P 500 by 1% since 1969, recorded at a 12.2% annual return. Moreover, these two assets indices are negatively correlated at -0.03, implying large diversification benefits by building portfolio for both asset classes (Erb and Harvey, 2005). Gorton and Rouwenhorst (2004) and Bhardwaj et al. (2015) document that the risk premium (excess return deviating from its average value) generated from trading in commodity futures is quite close to trading in the stock market, with 4.95% and 5.91% annually from 1959 to 2014.

Regarding the market integration test, the CAPM model is the best candidate using the equity market portfolio as a benchmark to capture the co-movement with the global commodity futures market. Consistent with the law of one price theory, a factor (stock market portfolio return) that can explain cross sectional the average return in equity should be able to explain the average return of the global commodity futures as well. However, there is no significance found via the CAPM model, extended CAPM model and traditional equity motivated approach, which states the heterogeneity of the commodity futures return (Jagannathan, 1985 and Erb and Harvey, 2005).

Dusak (1973), Kolb (1992) and Bessembinder (1992), among others, point out that commodities like wheat, corn and soy bean do not generate risk premium based on the CAPM asset pricing model. A similar result is also confirmed by Ehrhardt et al. (1987) who use a two-factor model under the framework of arbitrage pricing theory (APT). Based on the weighting index method by Marcus (1984), Baxter et al. (1985) and Black (1976) find that the systematic risk premium does not exist.

However, it is worth mentioning that the above result does hold only for agriculture products such as wheat, corn and soy bean. By allowing the existence of speculators' net long and short position in futures market as well as inclusion of commodity index in market portfolio, Carter et al. (1983) document the market portfolio beta significance. This is consistent with Bodie and Rosansky (1980) who use more commodity products and longer testing samples and Fama and French (1987) who find time-varying risk premium for most commodity products.

The most comprehensive market segmentation test is proposed by Daskalaki et al. (2014), who among others, offer a large comparison study by employing the CAPM extended series model (CCAPM, MACPM, MCCAPM,...) , macro-economic factors (consumption growth, money growth, FX factor...) and equity-motivated factors (FF, Carhart, LFF and LCarhart). The results indicate that there is no statistically transmission from the equity market to the global commodity futures market. Up to now, findings on the CAPM model based test is still mixed and ambiguous.

1.3 Theoretical Background

Motivated by the market segmentation evidence above, pricing theories for futures market are needed. In the following sections, the most widely cited traditional theories applied in the global commodity futures market are introduced and discussed. In addition, theories that are proposed in other asset markets are also referred for the sake of explaining new findings in this thesis,

1.3.1 Storage, Backwardation and Hedging Pressure

The early theories on commodity futures mainly refer to storage cost. The theory of storage is initially introduced by Working (1949) and Kaldor (1939), stating that the cost of carrying the underlying physical products needed to be priced (compensated). On the contrary, potential profits by selling physical products at a higher price under the scenario of commodity supply scarcity are also needed to be taken into account. These two directions formally shed light on a positive (negative) relation between commodity return and storage cost (convenience yield).

Moving forward and standing on the side of the production firm, Pindyck (1990) uses the decomposed cost of the holding inventory and states that a convex function shows a good fit on the convenience yield with respect to inventory level. Recently, linear regression (with inclusion of the squared convenience yield) from Dincerler et al. (2005) and the sensitivity analysis (with changes on the normalized inventory data in the spline regression analysis) from Gorton et al. (2007) confirm a non-linear relationship between convenience yield and storage.

The backwardation theory is introduced by Keynes (1930) who gives a new idea on how and why it is possible for contract buyers to hold the futures contract. When the futures contract is discounted priced relative to its expected spot price, the convergence between futures price and spot price at expiration date provide risk premium to the contract's holders. Normally, discounted contracts are offered by large producers or those people who want to hedge their physical products transaction risk in a future time point. When above scenario is on opposite side, the market is then referred to contango (the futures contract price is higher than the expected spot price). Taken together, these two scenarios describe the market equilibrium in which either futures contract seller or buyers will obtain (bear) corresponding premiums (risk).

Hedging pressure (net or long only option interest position for both speculators and hedgers) is another explanation of risk premium (see Stoll, 1979, Hirshleifer, 1988 and Hirshleifer, 1990). The risk premium identification procedure is built on market participators modelling: inter-temporal portfolio optimisation and informational barriers.

Specifically, markets are classified as non-marketable and marketable and both speculators and hedgers are included, which is different from previous partial-equilibrium model. In the sense of equilibrium, the futures risk premium is then decomposed into a systematic part (market beta which is marketable) and residual part (non-marketable).

In the spirit of Merton (1987), speculators are restricted to market as they need to pay certain set up cost to know the market. And the residual risk premium is positively marginal to the number of participators in the market. When the cost for speculators to enter the market is large, risk premium then goes up as few speculators can take the whole premium from hedgers. Back to the theory, when hedgers goes short (long), equilibrium implies backwardation (contango).

1.3.2 Skewness Preference in the CAPM

Within the case of the asset pricing model, the mean-variance method, used for describing the behaviour of investors in the whole financial market, is not accurate or to some extent not valid. The argument for this is due to the break of normality assumption of the distribution of the underlying asset return, which results in the imprecise modelling of investors' decision based solely on the expected mean and volatility. In the meantime, narrowing problem by assuming homogeneous rational idea is also not generally approachable across all scenarios (e.g. "Lotto Investors"[1]) in the real world.

More recently, skewness preference, defined as a specific portfolio construction behaviour of selecting assets with a strong skewness (normally positive skewed assets), becomes one important topic in both equity and futures markets. The economics explanation behind is firstly attributed to the

[1] see following section on behaviour finance discussion.

extension of the pricing model of the CAPM on the equity market.

Following the Sharpe-Lintner asset pricing model, demonstrated by (Sharpe, 1964, Mossin, 1966 and Lintner, 1965), Arditti and Levy (1975) extend their two-factor model into a three-factor model that takes into consideration of skewness effect on assets allocation. Given the theoretical argument, skewness is positively related to both mean return and volatility, which leads to a new efficient frontier on which portfolios are strictly dominating others (those portfolios who are below or above this new frontiers). One year later, Kraus and Litzenberger (1976) show that after considering the utility function with concave property and positive skewness preference, systematic skewness is a necessity for model pricing.

Empirical tests also support their proposal with the coefficient for systematic skewness being positive and significant. This indicates a new fact that previous mispricing in equity market is not attributed to borrowing constraints or lending rates. Instead, it is due to the lack of the consideration on the systematic skewness effect in asset pricing model. This is confirmed by Lim (1989) who employs the generalized moments method (GMM) to identify the importance of skewness.

Unlike the result in the equity market, there is no strong evidence to support existence of skewness effect in the future market, especially when the systematic risk is controlled Junkus (1991). The reason why they fail to test the significance may be attributed to the wrong selection of market portfolio: S&P 500 and BLS wholesale price index.

Followed by Junkus (1991), Christie-David and Chaudhry (2001) adopt nine market indices as proxy for the market portfolios and co-skewness and co-kurtosis as the risk factor. In terms of the testing method from Fama_Macbeth two-step analysis (Fama and MacBeth, 1973), systematic skewness has strong relation with future period return. R^2 is increased when adding co-skewness and co-kurtosis in the asset pricing model, which is also robust regardless of the market portfolio selection within nine market indices.

1.3.3 Behaviour Finance

Most recently, research studies on skewness preference explanation, both in equity and futures markets, are more concentrated on topics linked to behaviour finance. By allowing heterogeneous preference on skewness consideration in portfolio investing, the one-period agent utility maximisation problem is proposed, which predicts lower future returns for the positive skewness preference (Mitton and Vorkink, 2007). These agents who have strong propensity on positive skewness are marked as ”Lotto Investors”. In the sense of distribution property, they expect to have large compensation from investing in these positively skewed assets.

Another theory backing up this skewness preference investing is formed on the cumulative prospect theory by (Tversky and Kahneman, 1992 and Barberis and Huang, 2008). Regardless of the appearance of short-selling restrictions, the cumulative prospect theory explains that positively skewed assets (large positive return with small probability) are over weighted by investors. A special value function, which is convex in loss and concave in gain is applied to model the assets' selection behaviour. Given more expected value on potential extreme positive returns in the future, the more they pay for this asset, the more likely it is for this to result in underlying product over-pricing. The consequent buying (selling) assets with positive (negative) skewness will generate fewer (more) positive returns in the subsequent period.

Their ideas are also consistent with the optimal belief framework from Brunnermeier and Parker (2005) and Brunnermeier et al. (2007) who state that there is a type of agents who maximise their current utilities by distorting their beliefs on future probability (endogenous-probabilities model). The results confirm that assets with higher idiosyncratic skewness yield less profits.

Up to now, the application of testing skewness preference in assets' selection explicitly refer to the realised skewness, an estimator based on the past historical data. This thesis is moving forward to consider the expected skewness, a forward-looking measure obtained from the underlying asset option market data.

Considering the market trading restrictions (e.g. short-selling) or potential downside risk, Garleanu et al. (2009) state that option trading demand effect matters. The selective hedging idea (Stulz, 1996) is another aspect supporting the option-trading behaviour as buying out-of-money put option can be regarded as a risk control method.

Regarding limitations in the real world, investors holding negative (positive) expectations about the futures price movement will purchase more put (call) option contracts. This in return generates more negative (positive) skewness measures. Over-pricing (under-pricing) is then consequently embedded in the underlying asset price realisation, which leads to future negative (positive) returns. It is worth mentioning that this proposal has the pre-requisite that heterogeneous beliefs about the underlying future movement should exist (Han, 2008).

1.3.4 Technical Analysis

The technical concepts in this thesis are mainly attributed to the stochastic analysis, functional data analysis and regression analysis. To be more specific, for the second chapter, the option implied moments estimation process relied on the stochastic analysis. Asset return is modelled as the integration from both call and put option contract pay-off structures. The third moment is then easy to obtain by taking the expectation of return with power 3.

In terms of the risk factor estimation procedure, several potential errors advertised from the literature are taken into account. For the implied volatility estimation, both the Bisection and the Newton-

Raphson method under the pricing framework of the European Black Model (Black and Scholes, 1973) are employed. The natural cubic spline method is used to fit the implied volatility within moneyness boundary and linear or flat extrapolation for outside boundary (Jiang and Tian, 2005, Jiang and Tian, 2007 and Carr and Wu, 2008). The hermite cubic spline is adopted to account for the potential calendar arbitrage issue suggested from (Leontsinis and Alexander, 2017) when interpolating the final estimator in a constant time-to-maturity way.

The risk-neutral third moment is also concerned under different measurements. Therefore this thesis shows a more comprehensive comparison for the literature, from two different methods by Bakshi et al. (2003) and Kozhan et al. (2013). The first proposal is the traditional central moment method under the option pricing framework while the second one is under the price martingale assumption. This thesis is relied on the second measure while reserving the first one for the robustness check.

As for the second and third chapter, technical details on the functional data structure analysis are referred to (Ramsay, 2006 and Horváth and Kokoszka, 2012). Under their suggestion, discrete samples can be converted into functional observations. In this sense, the commodity futures term structure data generating process is then modelled in a functional way (data observation across maturities).

Based on the Hilbert space property, infinite dimensional curves data can be projected onto certain pre-determined factors (Dynamic Nelson-Siegel three factors) to reduce the dimensionality (Bardsley et al., 2017). Using the Kolmogorov-Smirnov functional form under the CUSUM (cumulative sum) method frame, a new detection statistics is formed for the curve data mean change detection procedure. Both asymptotic property and simulation analysis are considered and studied.

In the end, the functional autoregressive model is proposed to model and forecast futures market term structure dynamics. The main technique used in this part is the functional predictive factors model (Kargin and Onatski, 2008). For the completeness modelling and forecasting check, comparison is offered under the frame of the statistical method namely, the Model Confidence Set (Hansen et al., 2011). A further trading strategy via backwardation and new proposed variance minimization method are discussed in the end for the sake of providing economic implications.

1.4 Empirical Studies Background

In this section, the structure is summarized into two parts: the asset pricing (discussion on previous risk factors pricing the global commodity futures return) and the term structure modelling (extension from single series to commodity futures term structure modelling). The first part is the foundation for chapter two and chapters three and four are based on the second part.

1.4.1 Asset Pricing

The first empirical study recording risk premium in the global futures market is from Dusak (1973), who adopts the value-weighted S&P 500 index as market portfolio and indicates that commodities such as wheat, corn and soy bean do not generate risk premium based on the CAPM asset pricing model (the same results followed by Kolb (1992) and Bessembinder (1992)). His conclusion is that the results are not related to the Keynesian theory and the principal reason might be the no correlation between those single assets and market index he uses (few information from commodity agriculture is embedded in the market index). If replacing the commodity by copper that is more related to the industrial process (or the underlying economy development), the beta could be significant to some extent.

Instead of applying the one-factor model, Ehrhardt et al. (1987) propose a two-factor model to justify the risk premium within the APT framework and fail to find the significance. However, strong evidence of normal backwardation has been documented by Carter et al. (1983), who use the same model by Dusak (1973) but give two more extensions: allowing speculators to be net long or net short, and inclusion of the commodity index as the weighted market portfolio.

Different from previous studies on the commodity futures risk premium findings above, Baxter et al. (1985) argue that the market index chosen by both of them is overweighed as the S&P 500 index has already included a certain percentage of commodity products (similar argument inspired by Black (1976)). After constructing a new index using a weight construction method consistent with the theory suggested by Marcus (1984), they confirm that wheat, corn and soy bean do not expose to systematic risk and are devoid of risk premium.

Similarly, Bodie and Rosansky (1980) show that the beta coefficient roughly equals to one when research data coverage is on more commodity products. It is worth mentioning that their first trail is also consistent with the result from Dusak (1973) with no significance when focusing on certain specific products. What they suggest is that the results are more precise when more products as well as longer sample periods are employed.

Moreover, Fama and French (1987) document the instantiations of return premium in futures basis, denoted as the differential of future price and spot price. They find its time-varying property and statistically significance when regressing excess return on it in most commodities out of 21 commodities.

More recently, motivated by the risk factor model pricing principal (factor based long-short portfolio) in the equity market, the term structure factor, sorted by the futures basis, is constructed, demonstrating positive correlation with the individual assets return (Koijen et al., 2013, Erb and Harvey, 2005, Szymanowska et al., 2014 and Fuertes et al., 2015). They all statistically confirm the pricing ability of the term structure factor.

In terms of hedging and speculating behaviour, the hedging pressure factor is proposed with pricing capability in future market, which is also portfolio strategy sorted on market participators' option position[2]. Positive correlation is found between the hedging pressure factor and future return, which explains the cross-sectional variation among most commodities (Bessembinder, 1992, De Roon et al., 2000 and Basu and Miffre, 2013), while De Roon et al. (2000) specify that hedging pressure can be treated as a non-systematic risk premium[3].

The momentum factor, calculated based on the moving average of the past historical return, also shows non-trivial effect in global commodity futures asset pricing. The intuition behind is that investors are more likely to hold financial assets with positive past performance as they believe this positive trend will continue in the next period. The long-short quantile portfolio is designed based on the past moving average return and found with pricing ability (positive correlation) in cross-sectional return for most commodity futures (Asness et al., 2013, Erb and Harvey, 2005 and Miffre and Rallis, 2007).

However, literature for these factors pricing ability conclusion are still mixed. Daskalaki et al. (2014) document no significance on the commodity-specified risk factors mentioned above. Although they nearly reject all factors in the commodity futures market, consideration on the risk-neutral high moments' effect is still missing, which leads to the uniqueness of this thesis in this field.

More recently, the popular risk factor exploration direction is more related to the "idiosyncratic" property of return distribution, for example, volatility and skewness. The "idiosyncratic" here refers to a more generic idea that factors is out of the control of the systematic risk factor in traditional literature. In another world, there could be a factor whose pricing ability cannot be explained by the common traditional risk factors or is real idiosyncratic part obtained from regression residuals.

[2]The calculation method will be different for speculators and hedgers, in this thesis, speculators' positions are used for main conclusion while hedgers' positions are tested for robustness, for formula, see methodology part.

[3]Which can be referred to this thesis's results given that product selection in portfolio construction can make a difference

Earlier studies about individuals' skewness are often found in the equity market. Conditional skewness[4] is tested for the equity market among the stock pool with different sorting criteria and subsample analysis, they find that conditional skewness can price to some extent but not general for all assets (Harvey and Siddique, 2000). One reason for their failure might be the imperfection of skewness measurement as it is not the ex-ante measure of the skewness based approach.

As for the attractive attribute of the ex-ante measure, Boyer et al. (2010) find that idiosyncratic volatility can be a good proxy variable to linearly estimate the expected idiosyncratic skewness. Based on the linear regression approach, the expected idiosyncratic skewness plays an excellent role generating 1% abnormal return monthly. This is recorded with a negative relation between skewness and subsequent return after controlling the Fama_French three-factor model. Their result is also consistent with Amaya et al. (2011) who use a new estimation method with intra-day (high frequency) data to measure the realised skewness and document that it has a significant negative relation on subsequent returns. The success of their findings is more related to the employment of high frequency data due to benefit of the improved estimation accuracy compared with the usage of low frequency data. Different from previous researches, real ex ante skewness is obtained in two different ways, implemented by Bali and Murray (2013) and Conrad et al. (2013), both of them find the same relation for the Risk-Neutral Skewness and expected return. However, their empirical results are more focused on the stock market rather than on the future market, which point out how the gap is filled in the literature.

1.4.2 Term Structure Modelling

Different from the factor asset pricing modelling mentioned above (long-short portfolio via single time series return data), the global commodity futures are modelled on term structure dimension. By

[4]Coefficient obtained by regressing asset return on squared market portfolio return, the same as co-skewness, measuring the co-movement between market return variance and single asset return.

meaning of term structure modelling, it requires the model to be able to account for the maturity effect. Traditional asset modelling on the underlying process requires more assets characteristics consideration and factor dynamics estimation, which often includes the complex stochastic process modelling and large number of parameters' estimation, see convenience yield and spot price two-factor model stochastic model from (Gibson and Schwartz, 1990 and Schwartz and Smith, 2000), stochastic model comparison and three-factor model in which the mean-reverting process of interest rate following Vasicek (1977) is extended by Schwartz (1997), also see Casassus and Collin D. (2005), asset seasonality modelling consideration (Sørensen, 2002).

However, the stochastic analysis framework tends to be complex in practical analysis for which a more flexible and easily estimated method is more welcome to capture the forward curve movement, in fitting and prediction across maturities' range. The fundamental technique is following yield curve modelling, namely Nelson-Siegel and its dynamics extension, see (Nelson and Siegel, 1987, Diebold and Li, 2006 and Diebold and Rudebusch, 2013). The idea underneath this model is to find the factors which can accommodate term structure curve change on different exposures: level shift (parallel move of curve for all maturities point), slope shift (more weight (less) on short (long) maturity contract) and curvature shift (more weight on middle maturity contract).

Apart from the original dynamics modelling, new proposals to the DNS model on the yield curve modelling can be referred to the following studies. Modelling on the decaying factor lambda dynamics by Koopman et al. (2010), completely different factors namely intelligible factor introduced by Lengwiler and Lenz (2010), regime switching effect from Nieh et al. (2010) and Xiang and Zhu (2013) and regime switching based Marco-factor concern from Zhu and Rahman (2015).

However, not too many works focusing on the application and extension of the Dynamics Nelson-Siegel (DNS) model in the futures market. In the global commodity futures analysis, the DNS model application and its extensions are mainly on futures products of the energy section, e.g. GrØnborg and Lunde (2016) use the DNS model within copula framework obtaining a better out-of-sample prediction performance than the benchmark, Baruník and Malinska (2016) include the neural network method in the DNS model, forward curve local dependence is discussed in Ohana (2010), regime dependence is introduced in an error vector correction model on dynamics of level, slope and curvature factors in the DNS model in Nomikos and Pouliasis (2015).

Karstanje et al. (2017), among others, who first propose a comprehensive DNS model study on all global commodity futures products with both seasonality and sector effect considerations. In their work, DNS three factors are selected to pass in the modelling for the sake of avoiding over-fitting and a new factor (trigonometric functions) mimicking the seasonality effect is also tested at the same time.

1.5 Research Motivations, Questions and Contributions

In this section, research motivation, question and contribution are formalised here. The second chapter is on the Risk-Neutral Skewness pricing effect test on global futures market, which is motivated by its pricing success in equity market (although pricing sign is mixed, see, Conrad et al., 2013,Stilger et al., 2016, Kozhan et al., 2013 and Gkionis et al., 2017) and its realised counterpart, Pearson skewness success pricing in the futures market (Fernandez-Perez et al., 2018).

The research question comes out whether the Risk-Neutral Skewness estimated from the futures option market can price global futures return both from a time-series and cross-sectional perspective? Furthermore, what are the superior points on the risk-neutral measure when comparing with the historical calculated one, exactly the Pearson skewness coefficient in Fernandez-Perez et al. (2018)? By answering these questions, this thesis is making the contribution to literature that the Risk-Neutral

Skewness can explain assets' return variation and outperforms the Pearson skewness.

The third chapter is inspired by the global futures term structure modelling. Since the DNS model is originally proposed to deal with yield curve term structure modelling, applying the DNS model directly on the futures market might not necessarily able to accommodate the futures market pricing characters. In the meantime, following the recent model extension on DNS (e.g. regime switching), the research questions about whether the DNS model provides a good fitting in futures market or at least in some sample periods. For answering, is there a statistical evidence to prove that DNS fails to do its work?

The contribution to this relies on a new proposing statistical detection method on the mean change test. Given the DNS model estimated factors, no change will be found if DNS has a good fitting on the samples. Asymptotic property is confirmed with simulation outcomes showing decent testing power on this new statistic. In the line of testing, an economic analysis, via multivariate forecasting regression, is also conducted to further identify the situation before and after changes in the data.

The fourth chapter is motivated by both third chapter results and functional data analysis advantages. Following the results of the third chapter, the DNS model might fail to capture the term structure dynamics in some scenarios. In another way, term structure data is also treated as non-smoothed curve data in a discrete version, which can be naturally modelled in the view of functional data analysis. Different from the literature idea of modelling term structure on the forward price, the futures basis (log price difference between two maturities for the same underlying product) is studied.

The research questions try to explore whether the functional autoregressive model can offer a better out-of-sample prediction compared with the DNS model and other functional candidates. To address this question, the statistical measurement as well as the Model Confidence Set test on the forecasting error and trading strategy performance are experimented, indicating the new method's superiority. Far more than this, the term structure curve reservation property across different methods is also well studied with final results supporting the outperformance of the new functional model. A new variance reduction trading strategy is designed for practical application on how forecasted futures basis can be used in the real world.

Up to this writing moment, all research contributions in this thesis are new to the global commodity futures literature. Several robustness check concerns are conducted to ensure the solidarity of the results.

Chapter 2

Risk-Neutral Skewness on Commodity Pricing

In this chapter, the asset pricing test framework is deployed for the new Risk-Neutral Skewness (RNSK) factors estimated from weekly 10-year options and futures return data. The final results have significant validity from both time series and cross-sectional tests. A positive relation is recorded between the future asset return and the current RNSK. Risk control based option trading activities (supported by the Heterogeneous Belief and Selective Hedging concern of underlying assets' performance) provides the mechanism of trading signal generation. Under-pricing (positive RNSK) and over-pricing (negative RNSK) based long-short portfolio outperform its counterpart (based on the realised skewness, e.g. the Pearson method) with an additional 14.6% annual return. The results are robust to several alternatives: on signal estimation techniques, regression control analysis and transaction cost analysis.

2.1 Introduction

The asset pricing ability of the third moment of asset return distribution has been studied a lot recently, mainly in the equity market and few of them are focusing on the commodity futures market. Equity studies on skewness, e.g. the conditional skewness[5] and realised skewness[6] by (Harvey and Siddique, 2000 and Amaya et al., 2011), the expected idiosyncratic skewness[7] proposed by Boyer et al. (2010) and the Risk-Neutral Skewness discussed by (Conrad et al., 2013, Kozhan et al., 2013 and Dennis and Mayhew, 2002). The findings with respect to the pricing relation to futures return are mixed.

The commodity literature on this subject is much sparser. At this moment of writing, the closest study in the commodity market is conducted by Fernandez-Perez et al. (2018) on the realised third central moment. They show that commodity returns are strongly negatively related to the realised skewness (measured by the standard Pearson skewness coefficient estimated based on monthly observations with a past 12-month length window of daily excess return)[8].

The rationale for the realised skewness pricing in the commodity future market relies primarily on investors' "lottery-type" preference. The behaviour of pursuing positive skewed commodities pushes their prices to a higher level as investors are willing to pay more for having the potential opportunity of gambling potential extreme positive compensations. However, the over-pricing of these positive

[5]Conditional measure differs from unconditional one (e.g. Pearson coefficient skewness) which is independent of other variables effect, requires conditional information to compute. In this chapter only, conditional skewness is specifically defined as the beta coefficient value by regressing asset expected return on squared market return, measuring the co-movement between market return variance (volatility) and asset return, $\beta = cov(r, r_m^2)/(\sqrt{\sigma_r}\sqrt{\sigma_{r_m^2}})$, where r is asset return, r_m^2 is squared market return, σ is a standard volatility measure function. For example, if the beta coefficient value is large, then when market becomes more volatile, asset return will change dramatically depending on sign of beta.

[6]All realised skewness is generally referred as using the past historical data to calculate, which represents investors' skewness measure with all the historical information they have, skewness calculation formula can be different, but in this thesis, it is referred to Pearson Skewness coefficient, $skew = \frac{E[(r-\mu)^3]}{(E[(r-\mu)^2])^{3/2}}$, μ is the mean of r, E is expectation operator

[7]Ideas here are based on linear relation between volatility and skewness, showing an idiosyncratic view to accommodate the high order (3rd order, skewness) distributional information excluded from baseline model. Idiosyncratic volatility is calculated on residuals (obtained from regression of asset return on baseline factors) in a rolling window manner. Then expected idiosyncratic skewness is forecasted by idiosyncratic volatility in a linear regression.

[8]Research on skewness explanation via CAPM and conditional skewness effect can be referred to Junkus (1991) and Christie-David and Chaudhry (2001) respectively

skewed commodities will be corrected as arbitrage is not allowed in the market, yielding negative returns on these positively skewed assets. In this chapter, skewness pricing ability has been tested using a superior measure of skewness, called Risk-Neutral Skewness. The empirical results indicate that the Risk-Neutral Skewness is positively related to the future return. This is not completely contradicting previous findings via the realised Pearson skewness studied by Fernandez-Perez et al. (2018). According to the bivariate sort, the average values sorted by the realised Pearson skewness shows increasing trend from the lowest quantile to the highest one. The Risk-Neutral Skewness quantiles sorting for traditional commodity characteristics are also consistent with their findings in the realised skewness measurement.

Since the realised skewness asset pricing ability has been well discussed by (Fernandez-Perez et al., 2018), this chapter contributes the literature by stating that the Risk-Neutral Skewness can do better than its realised counterpart. Specifically, this chapter will contribute the existing literature by two main points. Firstly, standard realised estimation of high moments (central moments like the Pearson skewness employed in Fernandez-Perez et al. (2018)) has been argued with a strong estimation bias. The parameters, in the realised skewness calculation, such as the past window length selection and the data frequency usage can deteriorate the final estimated results remarkably, which in return leads to a different strategy performance.

This chapter tries to avoid these problems by using a model-free third moment estimation method (based on the risk-neutral probability measure and all investors are assumed to hold the same risk preference). Risk-neutral third central moment is initially introduced by Bakshi and Madan (2000) and further tested by (Bakshi et al., 2003, Dennis and Mayhew, 2002, Bali and Murray, 2013, Conrad et al., 2013, Stilger et al., 2016 and Gkionis et al., 2017), showing a non-ignorable pricing effect on the equity market even though the current findings are mixed.

More recently, Neuberger (2012) propose a more general unbiased estimator of the realised moments with only one assumption that underlying price process is a martingale. Following their spirits, Kozhan et al. (2013) propose the implied skewness calculation method. Under the framework of the Risk-Neutral Skewness estimation, daily commodity options data are utilised to calculate daily option-implied skewness without any arbitrary selection of window length as well as frequency. This chapter embarks on various aspects, such as truncation error, discrete estimation error, interpolation and extrapolation error to provide empirical robustness.

Up to this writing moment, there is no similar works studying the Risk-Neutral Skewness pricing effect in the global commodity futures market. Secondly, a comparison exploring for the difference between the realised skewness (calculated in the way of Fernandez-Perez et al. (2018)) and the Risk-Neutral Skewness is conducted in the view of investment and trading. For investors in the commodity futures market, the Risk-Neutral Skewness is shown to be superior to its counterpart (the realised skewness) in terms of profitability, sharp ratio, maxdrawdown and etc.

This chapter is organised as follows, section 2 will go through the literature that is more related to this chapter, section 3 gives more explanations on why the Risk-Neutral Skewness is better and the pricing mechanism behind for the commodity futures market, data and methodology are discussed in section 4 and 5 respectively, section 6 shows the corresponding empirical results and section 7 summarises all findings.

2.2 Background Literature

Moving to the underlying distribution argument, the mean-variance model, used to describe the behaviour of investors in the whole financial market, is not accurate or to some extent not valid due to unsatisfactory assumptions. Rather than simply focusing on return chasing and risk avoiding, portfolio construction with skewness inclusion should be considered. Arditti and Levy (1975) extend above two-factor model to a three-factor one and prove that the efficient frontier dominates under the later scenario. Similarly, necessity of skewness in asset pricing is identified when using utility function with concave property and positive skewness chasing attribute (Kraus and Litzenberger, 1976). This new inclusion of skewness clarifies the idea that previous mispricing is not caused by the agents' borrowing constraints or lending rates. Empirical study by Lim (1989) who finds the positive relation between skewness and return. Continuing in this frame, Junkus (1991) states no significance for skewness to be systematic risk under CAPM, while Christie-David and Chaudhry (2001) find significant results by adopting nine market indices as the market portfolios instead of S&P 500 and BLS wholesale price index used by Junkus (1991). Results about co-skewness[9] in literature are still ambiguous, which direct the research interests to the idiosyncratic property of individual asset skewness estimation.

Earlier studies about individuals' skewness are on equity market. Conditional skewness is tested for equity market among stock pool with different sorting criteria and subsample analysis, Harvey and Siddique (2000) find that conditional skewness can price to some extent but not general for all assets. One important reason for this imperfect pricing may due to non-ex ante property of skewness. Boyer et al. (2010) states the excellent role of expected idiosyncratic skewness (linear regression forecasted values based on idiosyncratic volatility), with 1% abnormal return monthly generated from pricing test. Negative relation between skewness and subsequent return is recorded even after controlling the Fama_French three factors. Their results are also consistent with Amaya et al. (2011)[10] who use new estimation method with intra-day (high frequency) data on realised skewness measurement.

[9]In this chapter, this is the same definition as the conditional skewness footnote 5 although conditional measure is more general to conditional on other information, not only the market return.

[10]Specifically, their calculation is based on Pearson skewness idea with return mean is set to be zero, $skew = \frac{\sqrt{N}\sum_{i=1}^{N} r_{i,t}^{3}}{\sum_{i=1}^{N} r_{i,i}^{2}}$, where N is the number of observation intra-day, $r_{i,t}$ is the intra-day return for asset i at time t as they are use high frequency data. In more general case, data freqeuency can be adjusted.

Unlike previous research, real ex ante skewness is introduced and obtained in two different ways, Bali and Murray (2013) and Conrad et al. (2013), both of them find the negative relation between the Risk-Neutral Skewness and the subsequent asset return. However, this negative relation has been argued recently as some studies document opposite (positive) relationship (Stilger et al., 2016 and Gkionis et al., 2017). One argument comes to this difference may due to the fact that the Risk-Neutral Skewness is tagged by picking up short-term arbitrage while moving average manipulation from previous researches changes this pricing mechanism. In general, all these empirical results are more centred on stock market instead of on future market, which point out the gap in the literature which will be filled in this thesis.

Few studies are focusing on idiosyncratic factors (unexplained parts from traditional factors, term structure, momentum and hedging pressure) on global commodity futures return, Fuertes et al. (2015), among others, extracts residuals from regressing assets' return on momentum and term structure and estimate the second moment called idiosyncratic volatility. Based on cross-sectional sorting approach, the triple-sorted portfolio (sorted by momentum, term structure and idiosyncratic volatility) does offer a more smoothing return and lower drawbacks. Cross-sectional regression with dummy included also confirms its pricing ability as coefficient is relatively larger than term structure and moment across all subsamples. Skewness, calculated no matter in the third central moment, in idiosyncratic or in expected way, shows non-trivial effect on asset return generating process (Fernandez-Perez et al., 2018). Their empirical results demonstrate that after controlling the traditional risk factors, extra 8% average annual return can be obtained from buying low and selling high skewed[11] commodity futures assets. In conclusion, a strong negative relation is documented in their studies, which is consistent with the relevant studies applied in the equity market.

The closest research (in terms of only risk-neutral estimation idea) to this chapter is conducted

[11] By saying high (low) skewness for a distribution in this thesis, this implies more positive (negative) skewness value.

by Triantafyllou et al. (2015) who use Bakshi et al. (2003) method to explore variance risk premium (differential of realised volatility and risk-neutral volatility). Therefore, in conclusion, studies on the Risk-Neutral Skewness pricing ability test for global futures market is new to the literature.

2.3 Theoretical Background

2.3.1 Out-Performance of Risk-Neutral Skewness

Compared with the realised skewness estimator that requires a set of historical data, the Risk-Neutral Skewness estimator studied in this chapter has several good features. Analogous to the implied volatility, the Risk-Neutral Skewness is retrieved from options data under risk-neutral probability measure assumption. Within this probability measure, all investors are assumed to hold the same preference on outcomes and therefore expected pay-off can be measured. Risk-neutral moments have been argued with valuable information embedded in, which reflects the market participates' expectation about future assets' characters movement (Bates, 1991, Jackwerth and Rubinstein, 1996 and Bakshi et al., 1997). This forward-looking property is more informative and matched with modern finance theory as investment decisions are based on maximisation of the future expected value, while realised moments reflect only the past information. Current popular studies on heterogeneous belief and market sentiment confirm that the Risk-Neutral Skewness tells more than its counterpart (Han, 2008).

The other advantage of risk-neutral estimation moments is mainly due to its unbiased property of representing true moments (Neuberger, 2012). Under the aggregation property theory, he shows that low frequency moments estimator can be calculated in an unbiased manner by using high frequency data (e.g. option data). Estimator based on the past sample history length selection can be easily plagued by outliers (Kim and White, 2004). According to the simulation comparison of different moments estimation methods, they suggest that estimations, beyond the current standard approach, need more explorations to give more accurate and deep insight outcome. For data sample selected in this chapter, using realised moments cause bias as recent financial crisis period is included. In another way, short sample period variation can dominate the measure, while long-time sample estimation causes the loss of more historical information and freedom (Hansis et al., 2010).

In addition to the extra step of determining estimation window length, data frequency usage for realised moments calculation in terms of return series is also not reliable especially when return is in non i.i.d case (Neuberger, 2012). Bootstrap linear regression sampling shows that skewness calculated in daily (monthly) return is not proportional to the outcome in monthly (yearly). Following (Bakshi et al., 2003), they state that as long as the underlying process satisfying the martingale assumption, a model-free method with their aggregation property can provide an unbiased approximation no matter in realised measure or risk-neutral implied one.

2.3.2 Pricing Mechanism of Risk-Neutral Skewness

Before walking through the mechanism behind risk-neutral measure, the realised measure is first reviewed for later comparison. Those positively skewed assets preferred investors (known as lottery like behaviour) will push up these assets' prices as they are willing to pay more for them (Mitton and Vorkink, 2007). As a result, over-pricing for these positively skewed assets will in return generate less profits and underpriced negative skewed assets offers higher returns. Although this over-pricing phenomenon is argued to be persistent due to short-selling restrictions, this does not fall into this chapter case as selling is allowed in commodity future markets.

Regardless of the appearance of short-selling restrictions, cumulative prospect theory proposed by (Tversky and Kahneman (1992) and Barberis and Huang (2008)) explain that positively skewed assets are over weighted by investors holding special value function (convex in loss and concave in gain). By assigning more expected values on future potential extreme positive returns, investors are willing to pay more for those positive skewed assets, resulting in these assets' over-pricing. Therefore, buying (selling) assets with positive (negative) skewness will generate lower (higher) return in the subsequent period once this arbitrage is corrected. Recent corresponding empirical study is conducted by (Fernandez-Perez et al., 2018) who confirm the negative relation between the realised skewness and subsequent futures asset return. However, it is worth mentioning that the market theory implied from (Deaton and Laroque, 1992) shows that positive relation is also reasonable to be expected, which is in the line with this thesis findings.

Different from the realised measure pricing mechanism, frameworks for the risk-neutral one does not directly reflect above statements as option trading possibilities have not been taken into account in those studies. Motivated by the demand-based option pricing theory from Garleanu et al. (2009) and empirical findings from Bollen and Whaley (2004), the first pricing framework is the net buying pressure idea borrowed from stock market. In the stock market, short-selling constraints leads to the impossibility of fully hedged position. In commodity futures market, higher margin requirement for extra short position, liquidity constraints and inventory level maintaining cost are some important aspects to be concerned. Investors with negative expectation about future return will buy more put OTM options, driving the Risk-Neutral Skewness to be more negative value. Negative skewness implies the over-pricing underlying and causes less return once miss-pricing is corrected.

For this argument to hold, heterogeneous belief about the underlying need to exist (Han, 2008). More recently, Friesen et al. (2012) states that the Risk-Neutral Skewness is strongly negatively related to several market sentiment proxies (e.g. idiosyncratic volatility). Following the empirical pricing test in the commodity futures market by Fuertes et al. (2015), idiosyncratic volatility has been documented with significant pricing ability and negatively related to future return. To sum up, originating from the over-pricing perception of the underlying assets, demanding pressure effect with more OTM put options purchasing leads to the negative Risk-Neutral Skewness. When the arbitrage correction occurs, positive relation is observed between the current the Risk-Neutral Skewness and subsequent asset return.

Another framework explaining pricing intuition can be attributed to the selective hedging idea by (Stulz, 1996). It emphasizes that market participators tend to use selective hedging strategy rather than ”full-cover” hedging given the consideration of future price change. In line with their arguments, trading in OTM put option can be regarded as a protection on the scenario of unexpected negative tail outcomes (distinct from the traditional mean-variance optimization frame).

In the commodity futures market, if there is a perception about the potential decrease (increase) of futures price due to the current assets overprice (under-pricing), continue trading in futures market is not attractive as hedgers may be exposed to a higher cumulative risk level and need to pay extra premium to their counterparts (speculators). Under the framework of selective hedging, buying OTM put option tends to be more satisfactory and in the end, leads to more negative Risk-Neutral Skewness. As a result, those over-pricing (under-pricing) assets accumulate a higher value of negative (positive) Risk-Neutral Skewness, which automatically yield lower (higher) return in the period when arbitrage correction happens.

However, this type of mispricing will disappear in a short time instead of being persistent. Compared with the equity market, short-selling allowance in commodity futures is fully flexible as shorting is equally treated, therefore, pricing correction process will be faster and shorter (Stilger et al., 2016 and Gkionis et al., 2017), which is consistent with the second chapter empirical evidence.

2.4 Data Description

Daily settlement futures price, trading volume and open interest data from $10/10/2007$ to $01/03/2016$ are collected from DataStream: agriculture sector (cocoa, coffee C, corn, cotton NO.2, frozen concentrated orange juice, oats, rough rice, soy bean meal, soy bean oil, soy beans, sugar NO.11, wheat), energy sector (WTI crude oil, RBOB gasoline, heating oil NO.2, light sweet crude oil, natural gas), livestock sector (feeder cattle, lean hogs, live cattle) and metal sector (gold, silver). Palladium and platinum are excluded for the consideration of estimation bias due to limited amount of OTM option data available. One-period return is calculated in the log price difference. Consistent with the literature, the nearest-to-maturity contract is used and rolled to the second nearest-to-maturity contract one month before the nearest-to-maturity contract expiring. Option data are obtained from DataStream with daily strike price, traded volume, contract market price (both call and put options) for each specific product. Hedgers'[12] future only aggregated long and short open interest data are downloaded from the Commodity Futures Trading Commission (CFTC) website in weekly frequency[13]. In addition to commodity specific data, equity market related data (the Fama_French five factors) are downloaded from Fama_French data library website[14]

2.5 Methodology

Recently, model-free moments estimation is popular and widely cited method in the literature is by Bakshi et al. (2003) (denoted as BKM[15] method in following content). Based on log return calculation and central moment idea, they show that asset's moments can be approximated via using daily discrete

[12] CFTC requires future trading participators to identify their types (hedgers, speculators, not reportable).
[13] Data are regularly collected every Tuesday and released on the following Friday.
[14] http://mba.tuck.dartmouth.edu/pages/faculty/ken.french/data_library.html.
[15] Estimation formula is listed in appendix A.

price data from option contracts. This idea has been argued more often recently as the central moment risk is not easy to hedge in reality somehow. To account for the jump risk, discrete error and downside risk bias from the BKM method, model-free estimator from Kozhan et al. (2013) is introduced and applied in this chapter analysis as the main estimation measurement of Risk-Neutral Skewness. One consideration for Kozhan et al. (2013) method to fit the commodity futures is to control the jumps possibilities caused by futures contract return roll-over. After estimating the skewness, time-series and cross-sectional ordinary least square (OLS) regression analysis are used to explore both time exposure and risk premium variation [16].

2.5.1 Risk-Neutral Skewness

Generally, Bakshi et al. (2003) show that volatility, skewness and kurtosis can be mimicked via a quadratic, cubic and quartic pay-off structure. The input to this structure uses daily observations cross over options data with different strike prices for the same underlying. However, it is worth mentioning that moments estimated under the framework of BKM are weighted with squared or cubed strike price of the underlying. This weighting scheme introduces potential estimation bias especially during the illiquid period in which call option part will be deteriorated and put option part will be overstated. Put option price increases rapidly when market exception falls in downside way, resulting in more negative value in estimation (Kozhan et al., 2013 and Leontsinis and Alexander, 2017). Following their arguments, within the framework of aggregation property theory (Neuberger, 2012), risk-neutral third moment estimation formula used in this chapter is following (Kozhan et al., 2013) and denoted

[16]Rationale for using OLS regression method is evidenced either by empirical study (Fama and MacBeth (1973), Bakshi et al. (2013), Basu and Miffre (2013), Fuertes et al. (2015), Daskalaki et al. (2014) and Fernandez-Perez et al. (2018), by solving estimation bias by (Newey and West (1986) and Hansen (1982)), and by simulation comparisons with GMM, GLS by Shanken and Zhou (2007)

as RNSK hence in the following content specifically[17].

$$v_{t,T}^{L} = 2\sum_{K_i \leq F_{t,T}} \frac{P_{t,T}(K_i)}{B_{t,T}K_i^2}\Delta I(K_i) + 2\sum_{K_i > F_{t,T}} \frac{C_{t,T}(K_i)}{B_{t,T}K_i^2}\Delta I(K_i) \tag{2.5.1}$$

$$v_{t,T}^{E} = 2\sum_{K_i \leq F_{t,T}} \frac{P_{t,T}(K_i)}{B_{t,T}K_iF_{t,T}}\Delta I(K_i) + 2\sum_{K_i > F_{t,T}} \frac{C_{t,T}(K_i)}{B_{t,T}K_iF_{t,T}}\Delta I(K_i) \tag{2.5.2}$$

where, $B_{t,T}$ is the bond present value at time t with time-to-maturity is $(T-t)$ given value at expiration date is unit, $P_{t,T}$ and $C_{t,T}$ are put and call option market price at time t with time-to-maturity is $(T-t)$, K_i is the strike price level for underlying at difference value index i.

$$\Delta I(K_i) = \left\{ \begin{array}{ll} \frac{K_{i+1}-K_{i-1}}{2}, & \text{for } 0 \leq i \leq N(\text{with } K_{-1} \equiv 2K_0 - K_1, K_{N+1} = 2K_N - K_{N-1}) \\ 0, & \text{Otherwise} \end{array} \right\}$$

$$RNSK_{t,T} \equiv 3\frac{v_{t,T}^{E} - v_{t,T}^{L}}{\left(v_{t,T}^{L}\right)^{\frac{3}{2}}} \tag{2.5.3}$$

where, $RNSK_{t,T}$ is the Risk-Neutral Skewness at time t with the expiration time T.

As for the specific *RNSK* calculation steps, the first filtration step deletes all in-the-money call (strike price lower than market price) and put (strike price lower than market price) options contracts and leave only out-of-money options. In order to make estimated results precisely, the minimum number of call and put OTM option price data required for calculation is at least 4 respectively. Meanwhile, the number of call and put options should be equal in order to estimate. Since the practical analysis is to deal with discrete data, trapezoidal approximation (Dennis and Mayhew, 2002 and Conrad et al., 2013) is implemented to calculate of the discrete integral equations (2.5.1)-(2.5.2). Finally, those options have only one week left to maturity will also be excluded as the trading behaviour

[17] For comparison, BKM method suggested factor property is also reported in the following tables and figures, with name referred to RNSK(B)

on these options will distort the fair value of option value themselves to some extent.

After the filtration of data, discretion errors (e.g. the simple Riemann sum problem argued by Leontsinis and Alexander (2017)) and truncation errors are handled in the following ways. Given the option market quotes, a fine interval is constructed via the natural cubic spline interpolation within the strike price interval (Jiang and Tian, 2005, Jiang and Tian, 2007 and Carr and Wu, 2008). For data points beyond the current truncated extreme strike price range, a linear-interpolation method with the closest data is employed to account for the implied volatility smile effect or skew effect[18](Jiang and Tian, 2007). The interval is scaled by 2 standard deviation of underlying spot price to make sure the minimum effect from the truncation error (Jiang and Tian, 2005). The Bisection method[19] is then applied to calculate the implied volatility via the Black model by Black and Scholes (1973). All fitted implied volatilities are then converted back to the call and put market price via the Black model[20].

After the estimation procedure, following literature, 30 days constant maturity series Risk-Neutral Skewness for each underlying product is computed. In this computation process, if an exact time-to-maturity equal to 30[21] does exist, the corresponding value is used directly, otherwise, the hermite cubic spline is employed to calculate this constant maturity value, which accounts for calendar arbitrage issue. It also shows non-linear trend property for long maturity data fitting as well as provide shape preserving merit (Leontsinis and Alexander, 2017). For robustness, linearly interpolation is also applied to estimate the constant time-to-maturity RNSK[22].

[18]Here also consider flat extrapolation (extreme value on two sides will be used for points outside strike price range without linear fitting) and no extrapolation (only consider data interpolation within strike price range), results are similar not reported here, can be requested from author

[19]Results are also robust to Newton-Raphson method.

[20]Black model here is simply treated as a bridge on pricing, which does not affect final results

[21]The reason why focusing on 30-day constant maturity is due to skewness estimation purpose limitation. By increasing maturity value to 60 and 120 days, the number of interpolated constant risk neutral skewness shows decreasing effect. Therefore, to avoid data inconsistency and bias in the further regression analysis, only 30-day maturity is considered

[22]Empirical results are similar to hermite cubic spline, so not reported, it can be requested from author

2.5.2 Commodity Market Variables

According to the commodity market characteristics, traditional risk factors are borrowed from the literature and calculated in the following ways.

The *term structure* factor portfolio uses the basis as a sorting signal. Basis here is defined as the log differential between the nearest-to-maturity contract price, $F_{i,t}^{T_1}$ and the second nearest-to-maturity contract price, $F_{i,t}^{T_2}$, of a commodity futures contract i at time t with $T_2 > T_1$. Following Koijen et al. (2013), in order to make the signal more informative to sort on a cross-sectional level, the scaled basis measure is employed

$$Basis_{i,t} = \frac{log(F_{i,t}^{T_1}/F_{i,t}^{T_2})}{T_2 - T_1} \tag{2.5.4}$$

where $F_{i,t}^{T_1}$ acts as a proxy for the spot price, and $T_2 - T_1$ is the maturity differential in days. A positive basis signals a backwardated (contangoed) market and as such predicts that commodity futures prices will subsequently rise (fall).

The *hedging pressure* factor portfolio is based on participators' open interest that signals the direction of trade of commodity trading participators (Fernandez-Perez et al., 2018). The *hedging pressure* for i^{th} commodity futures contract at time t is measured by the ratio of speculators' long positions only to total position (also documented as large non-commercial traders in CFTC)[23]. The general formula is formatted as follows:

$$HP_{i,t} = \frac{\#long\ speculation\ positions_{i,t}}{total\ \#speculation\ positions_{i,t}} \tag{2.5.5}$$

where $HP_{i,t}$ is represented by large non-commercial traders (speculators) *hedging pressure* for partic-

[23]Long only hedger's position (large commercial traders) is also computed and tested, showing similar results to speculators' results, therefore not reported in this chapter.

ular contract i at time t[24].

The *momentum* is a portfolio sorted via signals that are the average commodity futures return over a past window. As in Asness et al. (2013), Szymanowska et al. (2014) and Miffre and Rallis (2007), a 12-month (52 weeks) window period is employed. Formally,

$$MOM_{i,t} = \frac{\sum_{j=t-1}^{j=t-52} r_{i,j}}{52} \tag{2.5.6}$$

where $r_{i,t} = lnF_{i,t}^{T_1} - lnF_{i,t-1}^{T_1}$ is the log return of the nearest-to-maturity commodity futures contract i on week t.

The *realised skewness* protfolios is sorted on signals that is the "*Pearsons moment coefficient of skewness of each commodity at month end t using the daily return history in the preceding 12-month window*" proposed in Fernandez-Perez et al. (2018). The same daily return data over the past 12-month to estimate Pearson skewness coefficient is used. After daily measures are obtained, weekly results are selected for implementation. The only difference compared with their works is portfolio rebalancing frequency (weekly in this thesis, monthly in their study).

$$SK_{i,t} = \frac{\left[\frac{1}{D}\sum_{d=1}^{D}\left(r_{i,d,t} - \hat{\mu}_{i,t}\right)^3\right]}{\hat{\sigma}_{i,t}^3} \tag{2.5.7}$$

where, $r_{i,d,t}$ is the daily return for i^{th} commodity asset with D (the total number of observation) spanning from 1 to 252. $\hat{\mu}_{i,t}$ is the standard mean estimation and $\hat{\sigma}_{i,t}$ is standard error with scaling factor $\sqrt{1/(D-1)}$[25].

[24] Net position on *hedging pressure* measurement is awarded of in recent literature, see (Szymanowska et al. (2014), De Roon et al. (2000), Basu and Miffre (2013) and Bessembinder (1992)), robustness check on net position for both hedgers and speculators are conducted with similar results to long only one, no reported.

[25] Another expected skewness, $Skew = \frac{P_{99} - 2P_{50} + P_1}{P_{99} - P_1}$, is also computed in a rolling manner with past one year daily sample distribution three quantiles $(99\%, 50\%$ and $1\%)$ and tested in the following, showing the same factor-return relation to Pearson skewness, pointing out that the option based skewness is distinct mainly due to risk-neutral property and no historical data inclusion (Green and Hwang, 2012).

2.5.3 Risk Factor Portfolio Construction

The weekly time-series of long-short portfolios excess returns (represented by TS, HP, MOM, SK and RNSK in this following content) are obtained by buying and selling quantile group assets simultaneously. At each time point, commodity assets are cross-sectional sorted via signals into quantile groups and corresponding groups equally weight returns are calculated. At the same time point, portfolio return is measured by the high quantile group mean minus the low quantile group mean. This procedure is then carried out when one new weekly observation become available and so forth.

Specific ranking period is identified for the sake of factor value calculation. The most recent 12-month window is used for MOM (52 weeks) and SK (252 days) signals according to Fernandez-Perez et al. (2017*a*), while TS, HP and RNSK employ the last week observation for comparison convenience as RNSK is argued to be less persistent (mispricing will be corrected in a short time, long time averaging weakens the signal effect) pricing factor in the literature (Stilger et al., 2016 and Gkionis et al., 2017). Specifically, denoting L and S the commodities included in the long and short portfolio, respectively. HP, TS, MOM and RNSK factors are constructed as high(L)-minus-low(S) portfolio, while only SK is constructed as low(L)-minus-high(S) portfolio. This follows from the wisdom that a high value of hedgers' hedging pressure, term structure, momentum and Risk-Neutral Skewness predicts an increase in subsequent commodity futures prices whereas a high value of the realised skewness predicts instead a decrease in subsequent commodity futures prices (Bakshi et al., 2013, Bessembinder, 1992, Basu and Miffre, 2013, Miffre and Rallis, 2007, Stilger et al., 2016, Amaya et al., 2011 and Fernandez-Perez et al., 2018). Hereafter, the notation HML denotes the corresponding long-short portfolio.

2.6 Empirical Results

2.6.1 Summary Statistics for Return and Commodity Risk Factors

Summary statistics of rolling continuous futures' return is reported in the table 2.1. Mean is annualized based on weekly frequency, showing averagely negative performance in the sample period. Standard deviations are recorded with higher value, which is reasonably to be expected as recent global financial crisis period is included. Assets' return distribution normality is rejected, which can be identified from high moments value column (skewness and kurtosis) as well as Jarque.Bera test from Jarque and Bera (1987).

Fully-collateralized long-short portfolio approach is used to construct time-series risk factors. For the sack of portfolio diversification idea[26], only two quartile groups are considered (bottom 25% and top 25%) due to non-negligible amount of missing values generated during RNSK estimation procedure. Commodity assets at the end of each week are grouped according to weekly risk factor value and held until the end of next week when new factor observations become available. Then, portfolio is rebalanced weekly and continues until the end of data sample. For the sack of practical strategy investing comparison, most related risk factors (their portfolios' performance) proposed in the literature are reported in table 2.2. For further statistical analysis, time-series correlation matrix among risk factors is reported in table 2.3 with corresponding significance highlighted in bold value.

From table 2.2, results for traditional factors like TS, MOM, HP.C (measured as percentage of commercial traders' short only positions) and HP are consistent with studies and findings in the most literature. The key interest point is about to what extent the Risk-Neutral Skewness performs different from the realised skewness and moreover, other well-established factors in commodity futures market. In general, portfolio performance suggested from RNSK factor is superior to all other factors

[26] At least four assets in one quartile group is required for better portfolio risk diversification

Table 2.1: Summary Statistics for Commodity Futures Return

	N	Mean	SD	Median	Min	Max	Skew	Kurtosis	Jarque.Bera	AR(1)	T test
Panel A: Agriculture Sector											
Cocoa	433	0.057	0.289	0.000	-0.167	0.143	0.051	1.295	0.000	0.014	0.571
Coffee	433	-0.075	0.329	-0.002	-0.145	0.177	0.133	0.854	0.001	0.013	-0.662
Corn	433	-0.047	0.319	0.001	-0.165	0.184	0.006	1.811	0.000	-0.032	-0.421
Cotton	433	-0.043	0.320	-0.001	-0.168	0.162	-0.028	1.320	0.000	0.025	-0.385
Live Cattle	433	-0.015	0.151	0.001	-0.089	0.071	-0.364	1.154	0.000	-0.018	-0.278
Oat	433	-0.031	0.376	0.000	-0.233	0.334	0.300	4.959	0.000	-0.062	-0.240
Orange	433	-0.009	0.369	0.000	-0.247	0.184	0.069	2.279	0.000	-0.025	-0.067
Rough Rice	433	-0.087	0.243	0.000	-0.142	0.099	-0.195	0.990	0.000	0.070	-1.036
Soybean Meal	433	0.142	0.301	0.003	-0.152	0.132	-0.103	0.390	0.155	-0.068	1.358
Soybean	433	0.068	0.264	0.003	-0.127	0.113	-0.183	0.631	0.007	-0.035	0.746
Soybean Oil	433	-0.081	0.264	0.000	-0.116	0.140	0.051	0.894	0.000	0.002	-0.891
Sugar	433	-0.046	0.356	-0.001	-0.230	0.145	-0.266	1.248	0.000	-0.075	-0.373
Wheat	433	-0.182	0.329	-0.001	-0.176	0.147	0.050	0.974	0.000	-0.022	-1.599
Lean Hogs	433	-0.058	0.240	0.002	-0.122	0.105	-0.324	0.464	0.003	0.057	-0.693
Feeder Cattle	433	-0.023	0.157	0.002	-0.120	0.080	-0.577	2.416	0.000	0.013	-0.423
Panel B: Energy Sector											
Brent	433	-0.168	0.348	0.000	-0.176	0.216	-0.196	1.894	0.000	0.026	-1.388
Heating Oil	433	-0.143	0.319	-0.002	-0.144	0.219	0.183	1.992	0.000	0.061	-1.292
Light Crude	433	-0.233	0.369	-0.001	-0.181	0.219	-0.174	1.630	0.000	-0.038	-1.824
WTI	433	-0.233	0.369	-0.001	-0.181	0.217	-0.193	1.618	0.000	-0.037	-1.826
Natural Gas	433	-0.450	0.409	-0.004	-0.162	0.208	0.117	0.520	0.045	-0.020	-3.171
RBOB	433	-0.075	0.356	0.000	-0.183	0.243	-0.224	2.349	0.000	0.003	-0.608
Panel C: Metal Sector											
Gold	433	0.055	0.196	0.002	-0.134	0.131	-0.085	3.235	0.000	0.002	0.819
Silver	433	0.008	0.349	-0.001	-0.241	0.226	-0.198	2.550	0.000	-0.005	0.063

Notes: the table reports summary statistics of weekly commodity futures returns from 10/10/2007 to 01/03/2016. First row of this table is for descriptive statistics and first column is for specific assets. Results are organized by sectors based on commodities' attributes: Panel A: Agriculture sector, Panel B: Energy sector and Panel C: Metal sector. From the second column, standard first four central moments are reported, labelled Mean, SD, Skew and Kurtosis; median, minimum and maximum value of return series: Median, Min and Max; Jarque.Bera test results for return distribution normality test are shown in the $9th$ column; autocorrelation with one week lag coefficient results are in the $10th$ column with name AR(1); the last column is unconditional asset return mean zero T test statistics.

based portfolios. In terms of the portfolio return realization direction prediction, RNSK based portfolio from either Bakshi et al. (2003) or Kozhan et al. (2013) is over 50%, while others fall into the group of less than 50%. Meanwhile, sharpe ratios for these two portfolios are also over 1, implying strong risk adjusted compensation given one unit of risk bearing. Considering the threshold or target portfolio return, omega and sortino ratio listed in table also point out the superior performance on two RNSKs. For portfolio performance via Pearson skewness coefficient, stated by Fernandez-Perez et al. (2018), annual return is only 2.5%. Compared with this chapter interest, this number increase

Table 2.2: Portfolio Performance Statistics for Commodity Risk Factors

	EW	MOM	TS	HP.C	HP	RNSK(B)	RNSK	SK	LIQUID	CV	IDIOSK	ΔOP
Mean	-0.073	0.024	0.062	0.052	0.033	0.115	0.133	0.018	-0.007	-0.028	-0.004	0.002
StDev	0.173	0.126	0.117	0.095	0.087	0.095	0.095	0.113	0.093	0.085	0.097	0.102
Sharp	-0.420	0.192	0.526	0.549	0.374	1.220	1.393	0.165	-0.075	-0.332	-0.041	0.015
SortinoRatio (0%)	-0.078	0.037	0.107	0.112	0.077	0.286	0.346	0.033	-0.015	-0.062	-0.008	0.003
OmegaSharpRatio (0%)	-0.146	0.081	0.231	0.243	0.159	0.582	0.691	0.064	-0.028	-0.114	-0.015	0.011
Skewness	-0.145	-0.570	-0.183	-0.092	0.102	0.206	0.404	0.192	-0.004	-0.077	-0.005	-0.908
Kurtosis	4.552	6.505	6.432	5.776	5.013	3.865	3.808	5.046	5.048	3.316	3.438	19.669
99% VAR(Cornish-Fisher)	-0.087	-0.060	-0.052	-0.046	-0.046	-0.036	-0.028	-0.061	-0.049	-0.035	-0.039	-0.093
MaxDrawdown	0.633	0.164	0.213	0.187	0.137	0.096	0.083	0.388	0.235	0.416	0.311	0.316
% of positive months	0.471	0.443	0.476	0.457	0.446	0.520	0.515	0.491	0.457	0.464	0.448	0.182
ADF.Test	0.010	0.010	0.010	0.010	0.010	0.010	0.010	0.010	0.010	0.010	0.010	0.010

Notes: most commodity related risk factors based long-short portfolios' performance are reported in this table. The first column reports all portfolios related statistics and time-series stationary test. The first row with bold label stands for long-short portfolios based risk factors from the third column to the right end: *momentum* (MOM), *term structure* (TS), hedgers' short open interest over total open interest (HP.C), speculators' long open interest over total open interest (HP), BKM Risk-Neutral Skewness (RNSK(B)), Kozhan Risk-Neutral Skewness (RNSK), Pearson skewness coefficient over past 12 months (SK), dollar volume over absolute return in past 2 months (LIQUID), variance-over-mean over past 36 months (CV), skewness of the residuals in time-series regressions of weekly commodity futures returns on weekly observations for the EW, TS, MOM and HP factors (IDIOSK), change of entire term structure open interest (ΔOP). EW, on the second column, is an exception with equally weighted all available assets long only portfolio.

remarkable to 11.5% and 13.3% on RNSK(B) and RNSK sorted portfolios separately. Regarding the risk management idea, trading via RNSK is less risky in terms of some common measures: maximum drawdown (maxDrawdown) and Value-at-Risk (VaR). Overall, compared with all other factors, RNSK factors present better return and less risk.

2.6.2 Trading Strategy Performance

The practical idea of how these factors contribute can be referred to their portfolio cumulative returns. This can be treated as a measurement on how stable this trading signal implies. The long-short portfolios based on risk factor signal are plotted in figure 2.1,

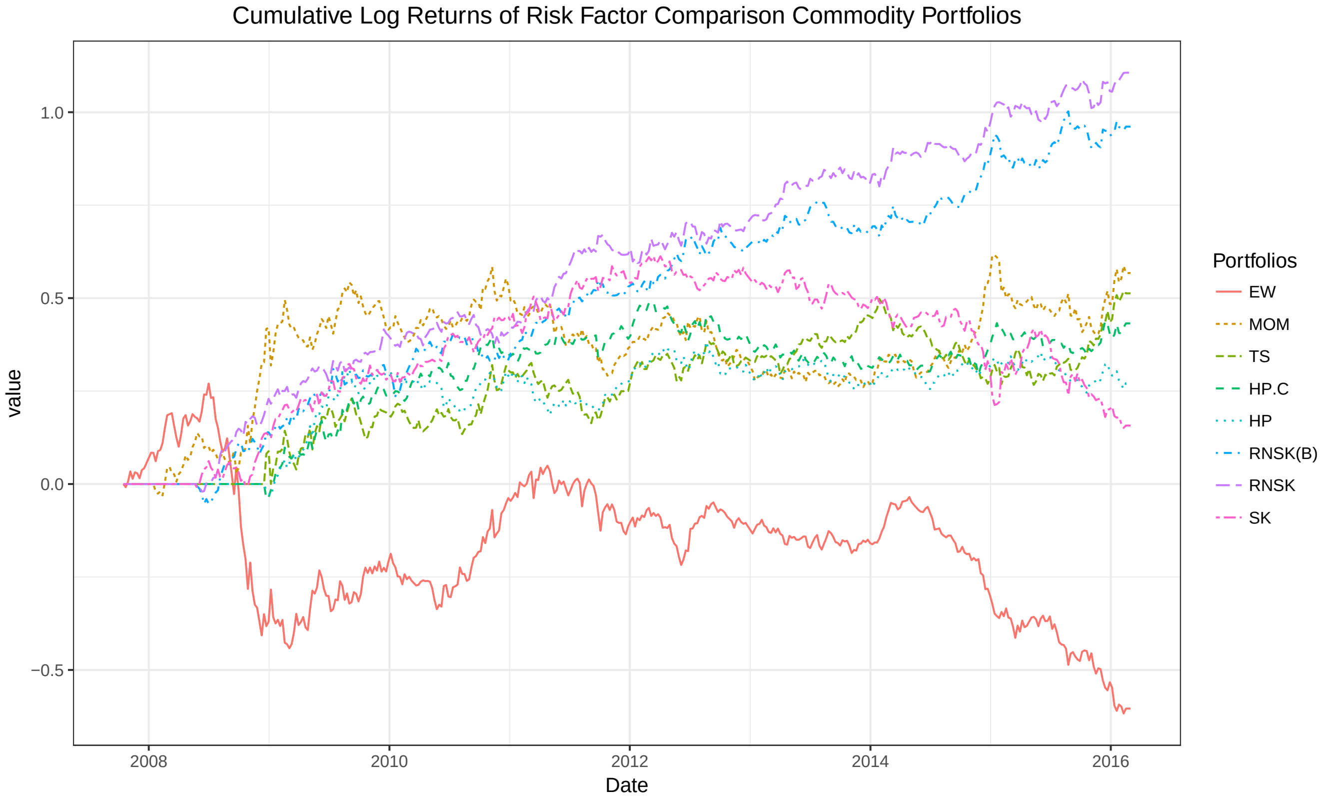
Table 2.3: Pair-Wise Correlation Matrix of Risk Factors

	EW	**MOM**	**TS**	**HP.C**	**HP**	**Mk**	**SMB**	**HML**	**RMW**	**CMA**	**RNSK(B)**	**RNSK**	**SK**	**LIQUID**	**CV**	**IDIOSK**	**ΔOP**
EW																	
MOM	**-0.263**																
TS	**-0.107**	**0.593**															
HP.C	0.018	**0.381**	**0.289**														
HP	-0.036	**0.313**	**0.292**	**0.600**													
Mk	0.056	-0.068	-0.049	-0.045	-0.046												
SMB	0.062	0.032	0.046	0.064	0.071	0.140											
HML	-0.017	-0.069	-0.038	-0.065	**-0.094**	**0.502**	**0.099**										
RMW	-0.030	0.030	0.016	0.002	-0.039	**-0.446**	**-0.302**	**-0.498**									
CMA	-0.058	0.000	-0.042	-0.006	-0.023	**-0.151**	**0.094**	**0.144**	0.049								
RNSK(B)	-0.065	**0.079**	-0.053	-0.063	**-0.096**	-0.003	-0.007	-0.007	0.026	-0.032							
RNSK	0.006	-0.011	0.005	**-0.139**	**-0.121**	-0.010	0.038	-0.015	0.048	-0.019	**0.721**						
SK	**0.122**	0.131	**-0.141**	**0.060**	**0.081**	-0.0004	-0.044	0.027	0.002	0.011	**-0.213**	**-0.203**					
LIQUID	0.038	**-0.328**	**-0.185**	-0.059	**-0.090**	-0.026	0.071	0.014	-0.022	-0.027	**-0.083**	0.067	-0.0001				
CV	**-0.253**	-0.077	-0.044	**-0.163**	**-0.138**	-0.040	0.004	-0.059	0.036	0.025	-0.050	-0.066	**-0.153**	0.049			
IDIOSK	**0.114**	**-0.207**	**0.119**	**-0.194**	**-0.189**	0.041	-0.036	0.031	0.004	-0.036	**-0.142**	**-0.093**	**0.303**	-0.012	**0.122**		
ΔOP	**0.200**	**-0.101**	**-0.111**	0.012	0.026	**-0.124**	0.052	0.007	-0.088	-0.060	0.050	-0.022	-0.069	0.065	0.021	-0.037	

Notes: following the table 2.2, this table shows pair-wise correlation matrix between two risk factors (long-short portfolio) with more extensions on the number of factors. All factor names are listed on both the first row and column. In addition to factors specified in table 2.2, more factors motivated from stock market (Fama_French five factors) are include: Mk (Long only market portfolio), SMB (long-short portfolio sorted by company market capitalization), HML (long-short portfolio sorted by book-to-market ratio), RMW (long-short portfolio sorted by firms' operating profitability), CMA (long-short portfolio sorted by investing style). Bold value in this table means at least 90% significant.

HP, TS and RNSK are in general performing better than other trading strategies, among which SK is not good as suggested from Fernandez-Perez et al. (2018) and the equally weighted long only portfolio (also known as commodity market portfolio) are in the worst group. The reason for Pearson skewness coefficient failing to delivery good performance may due to the time period selection, observation frequency as well as underlying commodity assets difference. The recent financial crisis could be another big impactor for momentum and commodity market portfolio as they mainly reply on the global market trend. It is worth mentioning that momentum factor provides nearly no benefits (starts with 50% cumulative return immediately after financial crisis and ends at slightly over 50%

Figure 2.1: Cumulative Log Return of Risk Factors Sorted Portfolios



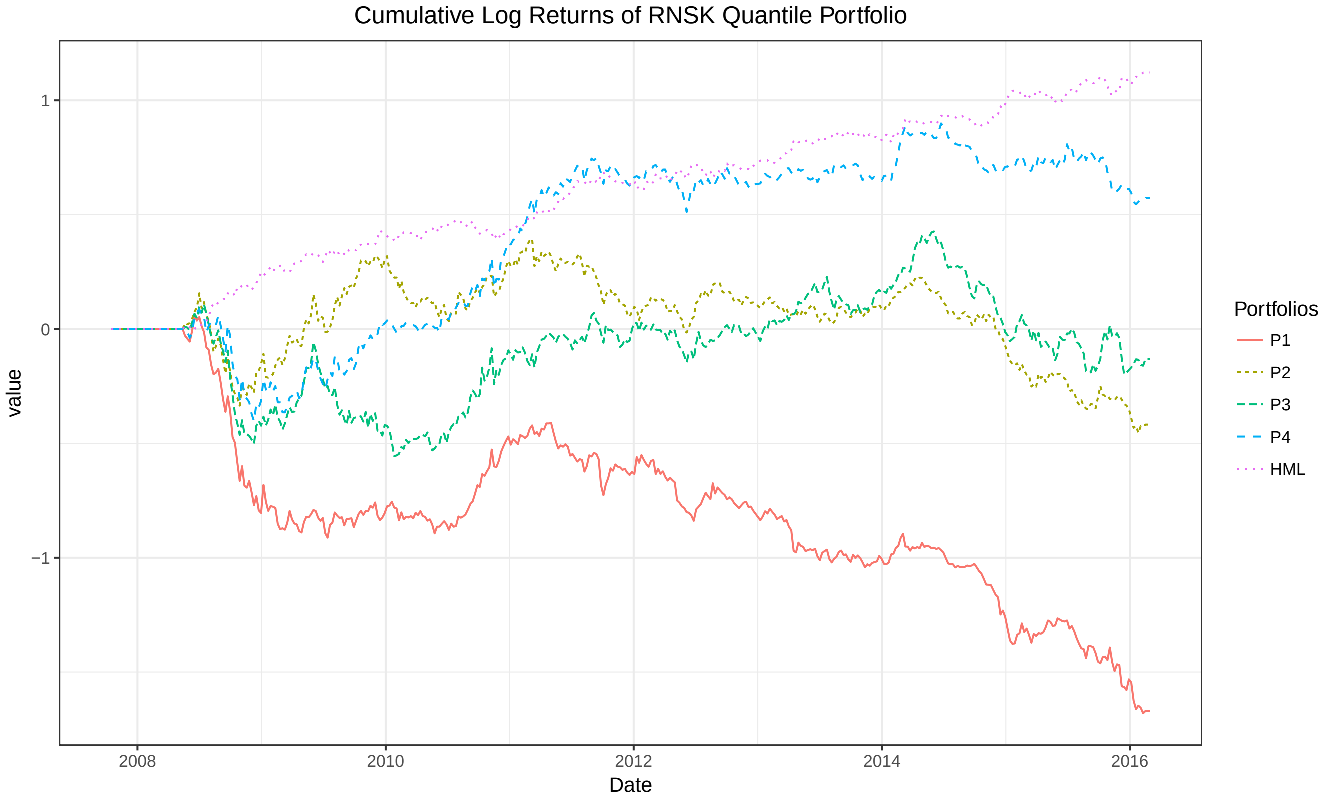
Note: commodity baseline models' portfolio cumulative are plotted: EW (equally weight long only portfolio), TS (term structure sorted long-short portfolio), MOM (momentum sorted long-short portfolio), HP.C (large commercial traders percentage short position), HP (large non-commercial traders percentage long position). There are two different Risk-Neutral Skewness measurements sorted long-short portfolio: RNSK(B) from (Bakshi et al., 2003) and RNSK from (Kozhan et al., 2013). For comparison in this chapter, SK (Pearson skewness coefficient sorted long-short portfolio) is checked. Labels are listed at the right of figure.

cumulative return) to invest, which can be also evidenced by its lowest annual mean return among traditional factors from table 2.1. Overall, RNSK is superior to TS, HP.C and HP and beats other trading strategies within this sample period.

The quartile portfolio cumulative performance is plotted in figure 2.2 to show the dynamics of each quartile portfolio. Since RNSK is computed in a rolling window manner, the first one year sample is not available to plot. Two extreme quartiles, P1 and P4, show opposite cumulative return path with strong asymmetric property on the lowest RNSK group performing much server than the highest RNSK group.

In addition to its superior performance, RNSK is also more flexible and has less parametrization

Figure 2.2: Risk-Neutral Skewness based Quartile Portfolio Cumulative Log Return



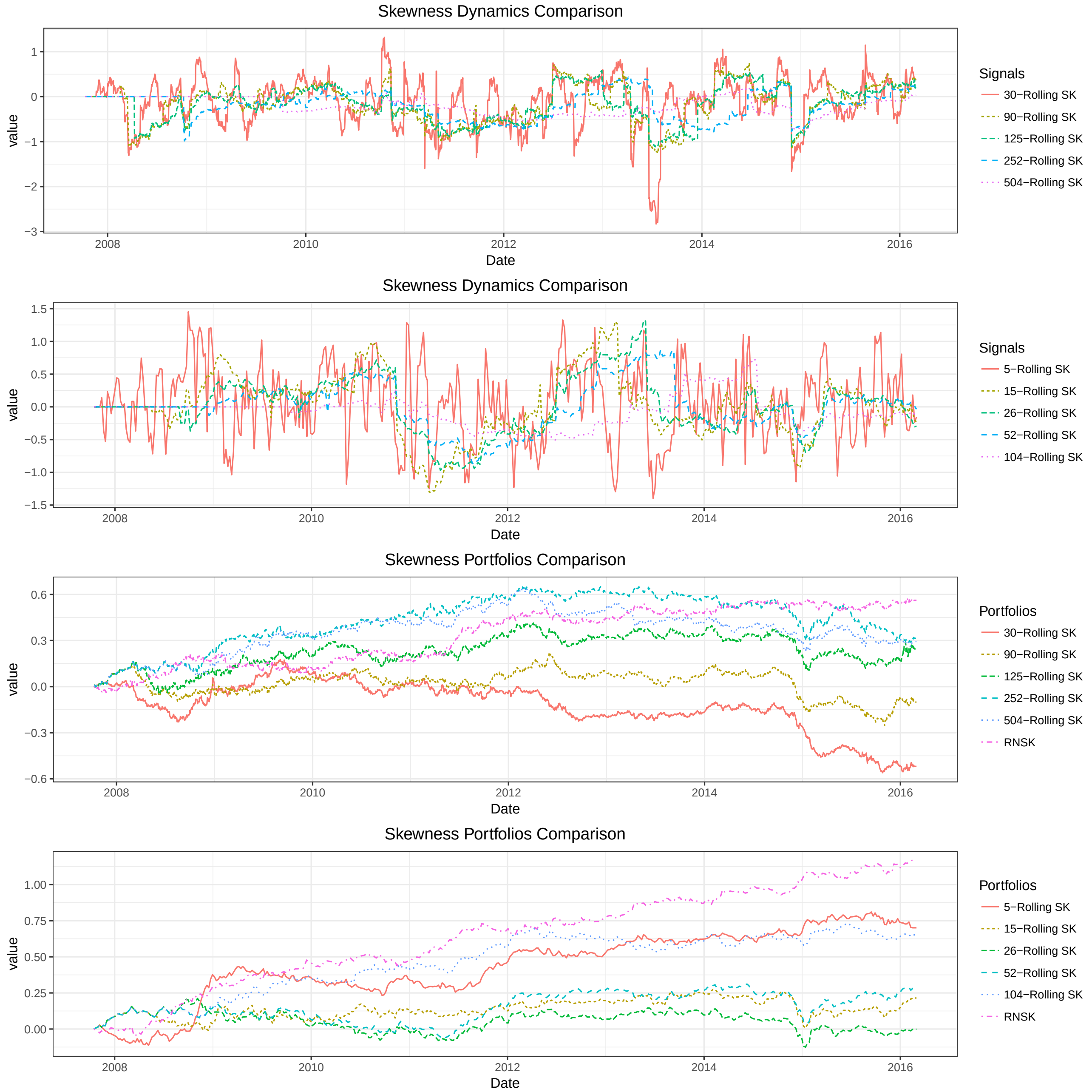
Notes: Five equally weighted cumulative log return portfolio return (25% quantile portfolio P1, P2, P3 and P4) and HML (quantile portfolio differential calculated as $P1 - P4$) are plotted. P1, P2, P3 and P4 is constructed by giving equal weight to assets sorted on the cross-sectional Risk-Neutral Skewness factor. In the specific calculation, all portfolio are restricted with at least 3 assets selected in each quantile group.

problem compared with the realised skewness (e.g. Pearson skewness coefficient) when constructing a long-short portfolio. The merits of using RNSK can be summarized as parametrization reduction in two aspects: window length and data frequency. Two different data frequencies (daily and weekly) and five rolling window lengths (1 month, 3 months, 6 months, 9 months, 12 months and 24 months) for the realised skewness calculation are taken into account. Dynamics of the skewness and corresponding sorted long-short portfolios are constructed in figure 2.3.

From figure 2.3, it is easy to see that estimation results are not proportional to each other when using the same rolling window but different data frequency (return is not normally distributed). Results are more likely to be impacted by some outliers in the data distribution, which deteriorates the calculation precision (Kim and White, 2004, Neuberger, 2012 and Hansis et al., 2010). In terms of

Figure 2.3: Skewness Comparison Analysis - Parametrization Problem

These four figures show consideration on estimation window and data frequency usage when signal is estimated via realised skewness (Pearson Skewness coefficient used here, same method used in (Fernandez-Perez et al., 2018)). From the top plots to the bottom one, data are formatted in daily, weekly, daily and weekly frequency. Therefore, for the first and the third plot, daily observation starts from 10/10/2007 to 01/03/2016, with $T = 1, \ldots, 2119$; for the second and the forth figures, data is on the same time span but $T = 1, \ldots, 433$. Rolling window is scheduled as (30, 90, 125, 252 and 504) days and (5, 15, 26, 52 and 104) weeks for (daily) and (weekly) signal and portfolio generation purpose separately. Regarding the value of plots, the upper two plots display the dynamics of averaged cross-sectional Pearson skewness coefficient estimators based on different rolling windows (depends on different frequencies). By saying averaged signal, individual signal on rolling manner is first obtained and cross-sectional commodities' values mean are calculated for dynamic plots. Risk-neutral estimated dynamics plot is not reported here as there is no problem on window selection issue. The bottom two plots are the top two plots corresponding rolling window estimators based long-short trading strategy cumulative return. Portfolio rebalance frequency is daily and weekly repetitively. In these bottom two plots, long-short portfolio return is reported for the Risk-Neutral Skewness as well.



the return performance plot in bottom two panels, the realised skewness varies within different data frequencies and rolling window lengths while RNSK works stable throughout two frequencies. Overall, RNSK can provide stable long-short portfolio return and free of parameters selection, which is more general and flexible for practitioner usage purpose.

2.6.3 Risk-Neutral Skewness Characteristics

This section explores pricing behaviour of RNSK by taking into account the traditional suggested factors. Results can be found at table 2.4 where mean of sorted factors at each quartile group and high-quartile minus low-quartile (HML) t test value are calculated and reported.

Although RNSK differs from the "lottery-like" behaviour and positive skewness chasing idea under the cumulative prospect theory, the underlying intuition behind is still on asset's mispricing: over-pricing and under-pricing. Overall, RNSK shows consistent group mean value sorted by SK factor in panel A, increasing from lowest group -0.24897 to highest group 0.16366. This relation is also supported by the fact that the HML quartile performance has a significant t-test value.

In panel B of table 2.4, all factors are sorted by the RNSK to identify their relations to the RNSK pricing characteristics. In general, the SK factor mean values for all quartile groups show a decreasing trend from P1 to P4. However, the SK factor value signs are always negative, which differs significantly from the opposite sorting procedure results from the panel A. Meanwhile, group mean value for the RNSK in panel B implies magnitude difference compared panel A results when sorting based on SK. The main conclusion here is, the RNSK is well matched from the SK sorting but in meantime shows more distinct character on sorting behaviour that is evidenced by non-trivial magnitude first row (RNSK) and all negative values in second row (SK).

Consistent with Fernandez-Perez et al. (2018), P1 (P4) quartiles in panel B shows strong backwar-

Table 2.4: Risk-Neutral Skewness Quartile Characteristics

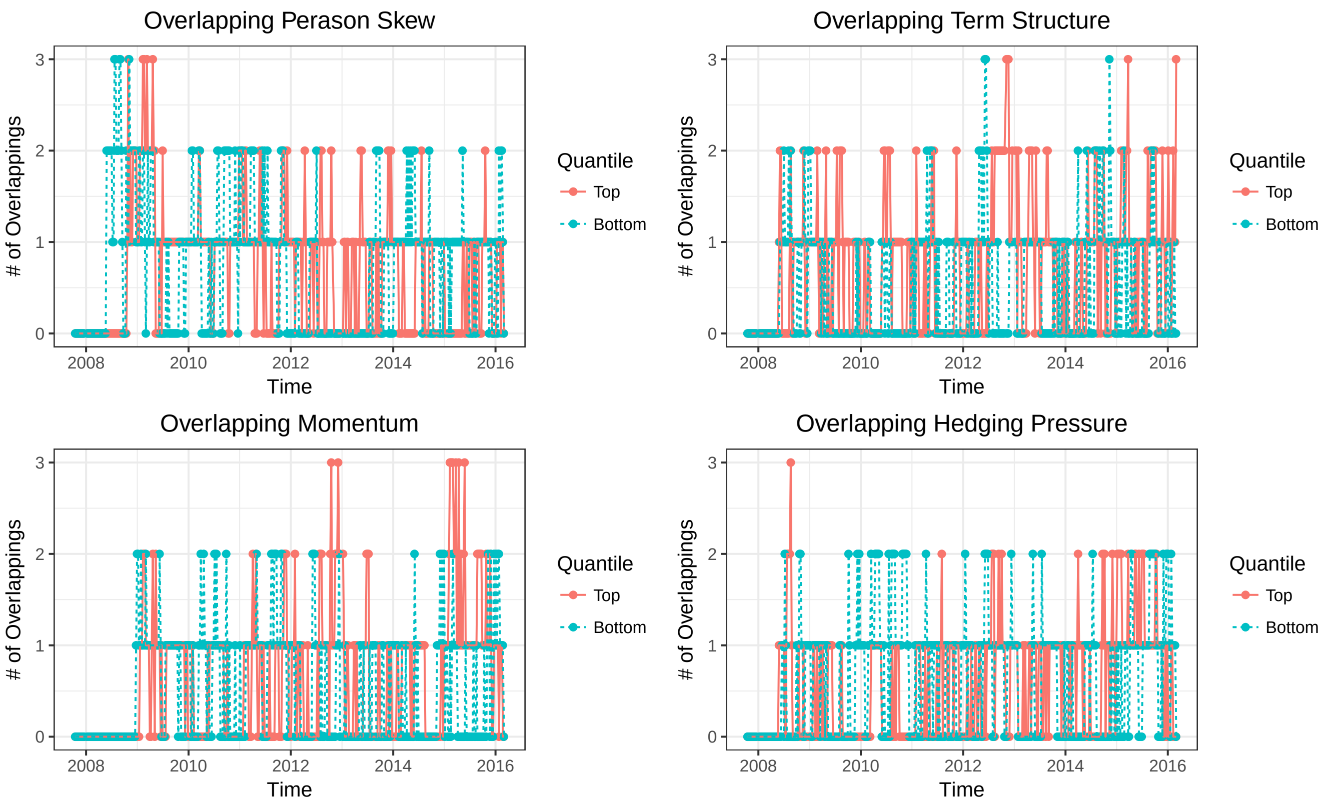
	P1	P2	P3	P4	HML
Panel A: Post-Ranking via Pearson Skewness					
RNSK	-0.24897	-0.02201	0.07194	0.16366	0.21916***
					(3.289081)
Panel B: Post-Ranking via Risk-Neutral Skewness					
RNSK	-1.48903	-0.16700	0.50670	1.67060	1.54302***
					(41.17034)
SK	-0.16827	-0.0878	-0.06521	-0.06364	0.0523***
					(7.981162)
Basis	-0.00062	-0.00019	-0.00099	-0.00119	-0.00029***
					(-2.162495)
Momentum	0.00028	-0.00021	-0.00109	-0.00156	-0.00092***
					(-12.13342)
Hedging pressure (Hedgers)	0.39108	0.40661	0.43370	0.43060	0.01976***
					(12.31988)
Hedging pressure (Speculators)	0.59947	0.58455	0.55984	0.56232	-0.01858***
					(-7.26529)

$^{***}p < 0.01$, $^{*}*p < 0.05$, $^{*}p < 0.1$

Notes: this table shows characteristics of the Risk-Neutral Skewness via quartile ranking and sorting. Specifically, in panel A, RNSK is calculated by taking the average according to the cross-sectional rank of Pearson skewness coefficient in increasing order within each group from P1 (lowest group) to P4 (highest group). HML (High minus Low) is difference between P4 and P1 and its corresponding t statistics test is reported in bracket. In panel B, all things keep same as panel A except for group average calculation is sorted according to the cross-sectional rank of RNSK in increasing order from P1 to P4.

dation (contango) ideas, which is accompanied by high (low) values of Basis and HP from speculators and by low (high) values of HP from hedgers. From another perspective, HP from either hedgers or speculators are consistent with the literature finding on RNSK pricing resource (Han, 2008). When HP value (long position) is small for hedgers, a negative expectation about future price movement is formed, implying that hedgers are more likely to short assets to avoid risks. Speculators are standing on the opposite side, therefore HP value will be different from hedgers. To describe to what extent their characteristics correlated to assets selection, at the stage of portfolio formation, it is quantified by exploring how many same assets overlap at each extreme quartile group in a time-series dimension.

Figure 2.4: Extreme Quartile Commodity Assets Overlapping Analysis



Notes: this figure characterize the overlapping information during the quantile ranking procedure between RNSK and other risk factors (*realised skewness*, *term structure*, *momentum* and *hedging pressure*). The number of overlapping is calculated based on trading signal on each quantile. For *realised skewness* and *hedging pressure*, top (bottom) quantile of RNSK is matched with bottom (top) quantile of it. For *term structure*, and *momentum*, bottom (top) quantile of RNSK is matched with bottom (top) quantile of it. Red line and dot stand for number of overlapping for top quantile and blue line and dot stand for that for bottom quantile.

Specifically, a time-series overlapping number at both highest and lowest quartile will be recorded. The purpose of this procedure is to test long-short portfolio assets selection similarities between

RNSK and the traditional factors. For term structure, momentum and hedging pressure, overlapping with RNSK use Top-to-Top (long assets in momentum, term structure and hedging pressure with long assets in RNSK) and Bottom-to-Bottom (short assets in momentum, term structure and hedging pressure with short assets in RNSK) quartile, while Top-to-Bottom (Bottom-to-Top) is only for realised skewness. From figure 2.4, all of them are less than 4 (full overlapping number at each quartile). It is still possible to observe that 3 same assets overlapped at one balance time for all factors at certain time point, indicating strong similar signal generation idea but not consistent for most periods.

RNSK overlaps more with SK factor during the 2008 financial crisis, which implies that the external driving force, market trend, has caused the same pricing mechanism between these two factors. Term structure and momentum has more clear observation from Top-to-Top quartile number than Bottom-to-Bottom, implying backwardation and winner group are more exposed to high implied skewness. Overall, except for certain time point, the overlapping information indicates that RNSK has more information that are not exposed to the current known baseline model and the realised skewness.

2.6.4 Time Series Analysis

In this section, time series analysis is conducted for each quartile sorted groups. By doing so, portfolio performance analysis is extended to the quartile level. Secondly, OLS regression method is applied for each quartile to quantify new factors' exposure with respect to traditional risk factors. Moreover, the extra unexplained information generated by new risk factor, called alpha (well known as the abnormal return which excludes the known information), is also studied on both value and significance.

Long-short portfolio (RNSK) is regressed on equally weighted portfolio (standing for sample overall long only performance), term structure (market backwardation and contango information), hedging pressure (market expectation from trading participators) and momentum portfolio (market trend follower in commodity trading).

$$PR_{i,t} = \alpha_i + \beta_{1,i} * EW_t + \beta_{2,i} * TS_t + \beta_{3,i} * HP_t + \beta_{4,i} * MOM_t + \varepsilon_{i,t} \tag{2.6.1}$$

where, $PR_{i,t}$ is the quartile RNSK sorted portfolio return at time t, for instance $PR_{1,t}$ is matched for P1 at time t. α_i is the abnormal return in i^{th} portfolio regression analysis. $\varepsilon_{i,t}$ is the i^{th} portfolio regressed error term at time t. i is the index correlated to which portfolio specify from P1 to P4. TS, HP and MOM are buying and selling portfolio returns, which are identical for each asset time series quartile regression.

From table 2.5, panel A, for the annualized mean, it is obvious that there is a general upward-sloping trend for quartile portfolio return from P1 to P4, from -19.7% to 6.8%, showing asymmetric property documented in the literature. After including selling availability, HML portfolio delivers annual 13% return with Sharpe ratio 1.39, which is significant higher than each quartile long only strategy (P1 to P4) and other HML strategies (based on traditional risk factors) mentioned in the literature (considering the Sharpe ratio at global futures market so far, 0.47 term structure strategy in Erb and Harvey (2005), 0.75 hedging pressure strategy in Basu and Miffre (2013), 0.67 Carry strategy in Koijen et al. (2013), value and momentum factors less than 1 in normal case in Asness et al. (2013) and 1.1 time series momentum strategy with all available futures products in global market in Moskowitz et al. (2012)). Moreover, RNSK sorted HML portfolio is distributional close to the normal with less asymmetry and flat tail. Compared with single buying portfolio, it is more reliable when applying in the real market with less risk to some extent. It also shows the smallest VaR value among all portfolios.

From the panel B, alpha (abnormal return) is significant for both two extreme quartiles at 99% significant level, demonstrating the fact that the baseline model from the traditional commodity risk

Table 2.5: Time Series Analysis – Portfolio Property based on Risk-Neutral Skewness

	P1	**P2**	**P3**	**P4**	**HML**
Panel A: Quantile Portfolio Performance					
Mean	-0.1971***	-0.0534	-0.0168	0.0686	0.1328***
	(-2.6922)	(-0.7587)	(-0.2059)	(0.9350)	(4.0211)
StDev	0.2113	0.2029	0.2359	0.2117	0.0953
Sharpe	-0.9330	-0.2629	-0.0714	0.3240	1.3935
SortinoRatio (0%)	-0.1615	-0.0501	-0.0137	0.0668	0.3459
Skewness	-0.3125	-0.0741	-0.2197	0.0324	0.4035
Kurtosis	4.9285	4.7057	4.4848	5.4418	3.8076
99% VAR(Cornish-Fisher)	-0.1060	-0.1035	-0.1157	-0.1123	-0.0281
maxDrawdown	0.8547	0.6003	0.5239	0.4111	0.0834
% of positive months	0.4018	0.4434	0.4688	0.4642	0.5150

Panel B: Time-Series Regression	(1)	(2)	(3)	(4)	(5)	(6)	(7)	(8)	(9)	(10)
Alpha	-0.1132***	-0.1180***	0.0243	0.0237	0.0788	0.0804	0.1789***	0.1814***	0.1460***	0.1500***
	(0.0009)	(0.0009)	(0.0009)	(0.0009)	(0.0012)	(0.0012)	(0.0009)	(0.0009)	(0.0007)	(0.0007)
	[0.0009]	[0.0009]	[0.0009]	[0.0009]	[0.0012]	[0.0012]	[0.0009]	[0.0009]	[0.0007]	[0.0007]
EW	1.0388***	1.024***	1.0069***	1.005***	1.0326***	1.0369***	1.0551***	1.0620***	0.0082	0.0187
	(0.0375)	(0.0375)	(0.0375)	(0.0375)	(0.0511)	(0.0511)	(0.0369)	(0.0368)	(0.0295)	(0.0294)
	[0.0446]	[0.0448]	[0.0500]	[0.0499]	[0.0626]	[0.0633]	[0.0462]	[0.0465]	[0.0346]	[0.0347]
TS	0.0374	0.0105	0.0449	0.0419	0.1813**	0.1895**	0.0999	0.1129**	0.0313	0.0512
	(0.0576)	(0.0586)	(0.0577)	(0.0588)	(0.0785)	(0.0800)	(0.0566)	(0.0576)	(0.0453)	(0.0461)
	[0.0695]	[0.0712]	[0.0655]	[0.0671]	[0.0909]	[0.0947]	[0.0594]	[0.0613]	[0.0476]	[0.0492]
MOM	-0.0164	0.0186	0.1954***	0.1992***	0.0995	0.0887	0.0059	-0.0110	0.0111	-0.0148
	(0.0473)	(0.0474)	(0.0474)	(0.0475)	(0.0645)	(0.0646)	(0.0466)	(0.0466)	(0.0372)	(0.0372)
	[0.0567]	[0.0568]	[0.0530]	[0.0536]	[0.0886]	[0.0887]	[0.0586]	[0.0586]	[0.0443]	[0.0441]
HP	0.1467**	0.1158	0.1676**	0.1642***	-0.2809***	-0.2813***	-0.1526**	-0.1376**	-0.1496**	-0.1267**
	(0.0734)	(0.0737)	(0.0735)	(0.0738)	(0.1001)	(0.1005)	(0.0722)	(0.0724)	(0.0577)	(0.0579)
	[0.0902]	[0.092]	[0.0818]	[0.0828]	[0.1224]	[0.1208]	[0.0749]	[0.0751]	[0.0661]	[0.0676]
SK		0.0673***		0.2296		-0.0707		-0.1114**		-0.175$^{**)}$
		(0.0572)		(0.0573)		(0.0779)		(0.0562)		(0.0449)
		[0.0670]		[0.0661]		[0.0966]		[0.0666]		[0.0528]
Adj.R.square	0.6736	0.687	0.6456	0.6488	0.5144	0.5145	0.686	0.6886	0.0069	0.044

$^{***}p < 0.01$, $^{*} * p < 0.05$, $^{*}p < 0.1$

Notes: weekly Quantile RNSK sorted equally weighted portfolio performance and regression analysis on baseline models results from 10/10/2007 to 01/03/2016 are reported in this table. In panel A, portfolio performance statistics are reported for long only portfolio sorted by RNSK from P1 (lowest RNSK group) to P4 (highest RNSK group) and HML (high RNSK minus low RNSK group). In panel B, each quantile time-series portfolio is regressed on the baseline model (EW, TS, MOM, and HP) and baseline model plus SK factor for robustness check. The first row in panel B reports the annualized mean with coefficient multiplied by 52. Standard errors are reported under the estimated coefficients, with standard error and Newey-West corrected standard error (12 weeks lags setting) in the round and squared bracket respectively.

factors cannot explain under-performance (over-performance) in lowest (highest) quartile. Regarding to the beta significance for each quartile group, term structure and momentum betas are not significant overall. Hedging pressure, on the contrary, presents strong statistical significances in most quartiles analysis. However, the signs of hedging pressure in the lower quartile is opposite from the higher quartile. HML group implies that hedging pressure based trading strategy has opposite trading signal from RNSK based on trading strategy[27]. On the level of the long-short portfolio, alpha is also signifi-

[27]This is consistent with Speculators' perspective, which echo the RNSK pricing mechanism from the perspective of

cant with annual return up to 14.6%. R^2, measuring regression fitting degree, with low value (4.4% in HML column) indicates that baseline more is not a good candidate for explaining HML RNSK sorted portfolio. This evidence is also robust when SK factor is controlled on each quartile group following the baseline model. This implies that performance from RNSK cannot be explained by both baseline model and the realised skewness sorted portfolio.

In order to give clearer picture of alpha dynamic path in time-series analysis, rolling regression with window length 1 year on weekly observation is used. Specifically, the RNSK long-short portfolio return is regressed on the baseline traditional commodity risk factors model using the first 52 observations and then repeat this step when one new observation comes in (adding it into the end of 52 sample and dropping the first observation, making total number of observation in regression consistent and fixed, always 52). Alpha dynamics and its corresponding 95% bootstrap confidence interval are then plotted.

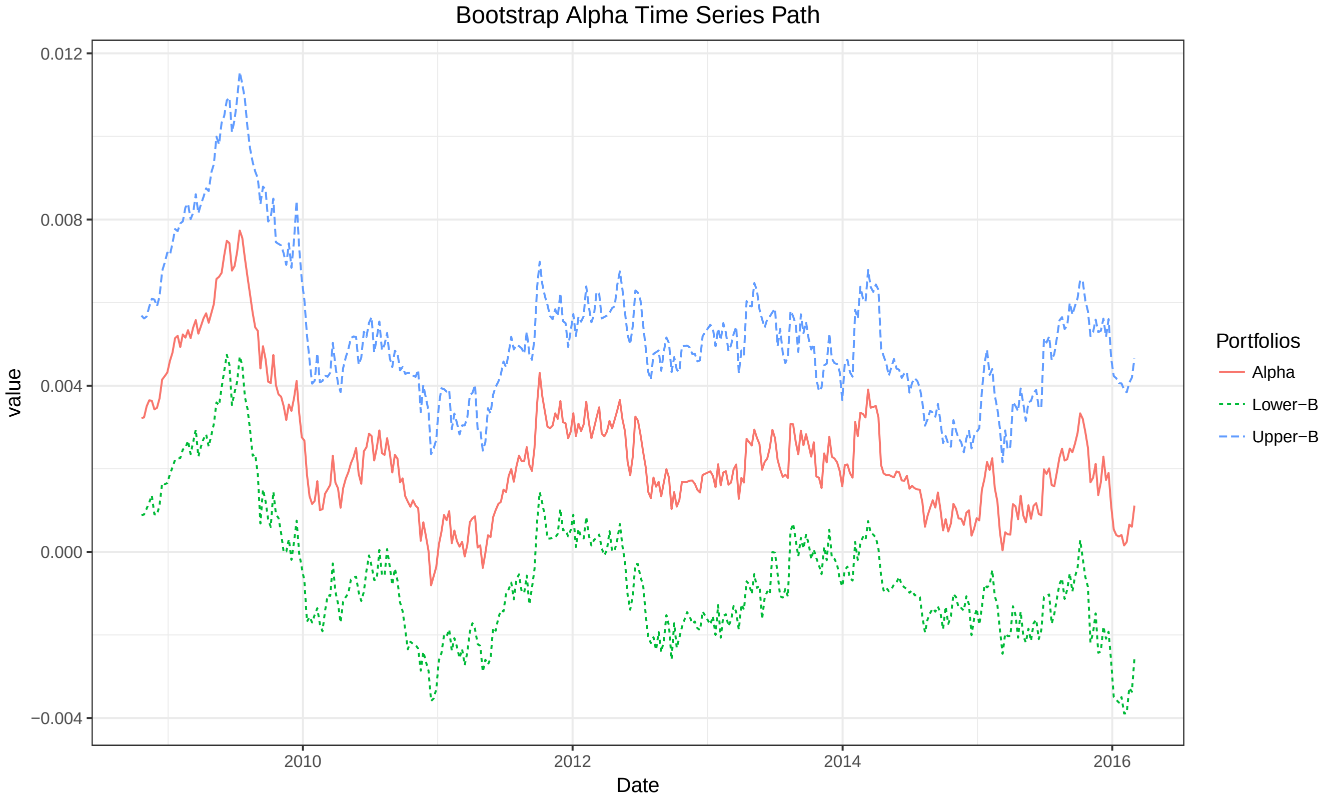
From figure 2.5, the mean for rolling alpha is 0.00289, or 15% annually. The worst performance is around the year 2011 and then average around 0.00189 (9.84% annually) afterwards. Generally, abnormal return is non-trivial in value across whole testing period as most of it is above zero value line despite the fact that zero value line is fall into bootstrap bound making this abnormal return insignificant somehow.

2.6.5 Robustness Check

This section employs other risk factors that have been discussed in the recent literature for controlling effect check. The reason to select following factors is due to their extra pricing effects in addition to the baseline model. Purpose here is to clarify whether alpha generated from RNSK is still significant and robust when controlling these extra pricing effects mentioned before. Moreover, transaction cost

hedgers.

Figure 2.5: Bootstrap Time-Series RNSK Regression Alpha Dynamics



Notes: the RNSK is regressed on commodity baseline model: EW, TS, MOM and HP with 52 weeks rolling window. Starting from 1 to 52 observations, rolling forward, dropping the sample first observation and adding one new observation at the sample end. At each subsample regression, 1000 bootstrap sampling is applied to estimate the confidence interval and lower 5% and upper 95% bounds are extracted. The figure has dropped the first 52 observations as they are used for initializing this regression procedure. Red line is estimated rolling alpha, blue line is upper 95% bound and green line is lower 5% bound.

analysis is also experimented here.

To be specific, the following six factors are utilized with five of them from the commodity futures market and one of them from stock market: (1) SK, Pearson skewness coefficient, long-short portfolio sorted by third central moment of daily futures return, (2) IDIOSK, long-short portfolio sorted by skewness calculated on the residual (obtained from regression of asset return on baseline model), (3) CV, long-short portfolio sorted by variance-over-mean of daily futures returns over prior 36 months, (4) LIQUID, long-short portfolio sorted by prior 2-month dollar volume over absolute return, (5) ΔOP, long-short portfolio sorted by the change of entire open interest of commodity futures,

(6) Fama_French five factors, motivated by stock market: Mk, SMB, HML, RMW (Robust Minus Weak)[28] and CMA (Conservative Minus Aggressive)[29], (7) transaction cost analysis is conducted by deducting 6.6 bps per trade from Risk-Neutral Skewness portfolio (Fernandez-Perez et al. (2018), Hong and Yogo (2012), Erb and Harvey (2005), Amihud (2002) and Locke and Venkatesh (1997)).

From table 2.6 and table 2.7, in general, alpha is significant through all scenarios despite the fact that R^2 changes a bit with different factors. Alpha is annualized and generated with 15.6% percentage average return for generally all cases at 99% significance level. One exception on alpha value is the column 13 where alpha reduces to 13.2% due to the fact that all explanatory variables are added in regression model, increasing the total explaining power, see R square at 0.049.

Another exception is for transaction cost analysis in the last two columns, with around 5.6% annually and 95% significance level. One finding to be well expected is the sign and significance of idiosyncratic skewness (IDIOSK)[30]. Following the test result from (Fernandez-Perez et al., 2018), idiosyncratic skewness has the same characteristics as Pearson skewness coefficient, and therefore, it is reasonable to expect a negative correlation between IDIOSK and RNSK. Moreover, hedging pressure measurements from speculators effect is also tested with row name labelled as HP. This result is not consistent from (Han, 2008) as his calculation is on net position rather than long position only. Research focus in his study is on the S&P 500 index future, which aggregates the individual stock level effect[31]. Table 2.7 suggests that portfolio sorted by hedging pressure and by RNSK are performing in opposite way. The difference could come up with dispersion effect among individual commodity futures.

[28] the average return on the two robust operating profitability portfolios minus the average return on the two weak operating profitability portfolios

[29] the average return on the two conservative investment portfolios minus the average return on the two aggressive investment portfolios

[30] Because of its property as a sentiment proxy variable argued in pricing mechanism.

[31] Analysis for individual commodity Risk-Neutral Skewness is repeated on hedging pressure, finding mixed results for individual level.

Table 2.6: Risk-Neutral Skewness Time-Series Portfolio Performance Test

	(1)	(2)	(3)	(4)	(5)	(6)	(7)	(8)
Alpha	0.156^{***}	0.156^{***}	0.156^{***}	0.156^{***}	0.156^{***}	0.156^{***}	0.156^{***}	0.156^{***}
	[0.001]	[0.001]	[0.001]	[0.001]	[0.001]	[0.001]	[0.001]	[0.001]
CV	−0.074	-0.112^{*}						
	(0.064)	(0.058)						
SK		-0.182^{***}		-0.160^{***}		-0.169^{***}		-0.168^{***}
		[0.051]		[0.050]		[0.052]		[0.052]
IDIOSK			−0.091	−0.034				
			[0.055]	[0.046]				
LIQUID					0.068	0.068		
					[0.076]	[0.078]		
ΔOP							−0.020	−0.011
							[0.042]	[0.038]
EW								
TS								
MOM								
HP								
Mk								
SMB								
HML								
RMW								
CMA								
Adjusted R^2	0.002	0.008	0.006	0.010	0.002	0.006	−0.002	0.003
F Statistic	1.893 (df = 1; 431)	2.847^{*} (df = 2; 430)	3.744^{*} (df = 1; 431)	3.261^{**} (df = 2; 430)	1.927 (df = 1; 431)	2.349^{*} (df = 2; 430)	0.200 (df = 1; 431)	1.675 (df = 2; 430)

$^{***}p < 0.01$, $^{**}p < 0.05$, $^{*}p < 0.1$

Notes: weekly time-series regression analysis is repeated for 14 groups (different models) from (1) to (15) shown in the first row to explore the significance of alpha (at the top of each model). From (1) to (12), every odd column, RNSK portfolio is regressed on one of following commodity risk factors (CV, IDIOSK, LIQUID and ΔOP), baseline model and stock market factors sequentially in weekly frequency, while in each even column, extra SK factors is added for robustness check. In column (13), all explanatory variables are included to for full regression test purpose. In column (14), transaction cost is added by deducting trading cost per trade 6.6 bps from RNSK portfolio return. Column (15) is corresponding transaction cost robustness check when realised skewness (SK) factor is controlled. Newey-West corrected standard error is reported in the square bracket with 12 weeks lags setting.

In addition to the alpha coefficient and its significance, the negative significant relation between RNSK and SK in table 2.6 is consistent with the factors pairwise correlation matrix result from table

Table 2.7: Risk-Neutral Skewness Time-Series Portfolio Performance Test Continues

	(9)	(10)	(11)	(12)	(13)	(14)	(15)
Alpha	0.156^{***} [0.001]	0.156^{***} [0.001]	0.156^{***} [0.001]	0.156^{***} [0.001]	0.132^{***} [0.001]	0.0561^{**} [0.001]	0.0598^{**} [0.001]
CV					-0.126^{*} [0.044]		
SK		-0.167^{***} [0.052]		-0.167^{***} [0.054]	-0.164^{***} [0.001]		-0.166^{***} [0.054]
IDIOSK					-0.061 [0.175]		
LIQUID					0.062 [0.423]		
ΔOP					-0.004 [0.928]		
EW			0.002 [0.031]	0.013 [0.029]	-0.002 [0.995]	0.007 [0.030]	0.017 [0.027]
TS			0.027 [0.053]	0.048 [0.053]	0.067 [0.223]	0.036 [0.053]	0.055 [0.054]
MOM			0.010 [0.051]	−0.015 [0.045]	-0.022 [0.649]	0.009 [0.049]	−0.015 [0.045]
HP			-0.150^{**} [0.073]	-0.126^{*} [0.072]	-0.156^{*} [0.029]	-0.149^{**} [0.074]	-0.126^{*} [0.073]
Mk	0.0004 [0.041]	−0.002 [0.040]	−0.003 [0.039]	−0.002 [0.038]	0.004 [0.908]		
SMB	0.130^{**} [0.066]	0.111 [0.072]	0.143^{**} [0.067]	0.112 [0.073]	0.103 [0.152]		
HML	0.038 [0.088]	0.050 [0.086]	0.013 [0.090]	0.022 [0.090]	0.0001 [0.999]		
RWA	0.277 [0.175]	0.277 [0.178]	0.229 [0.178]	0.232 [0.182]	0.223 [0.189]		
CMA	−0.143 [0.195]	−0.135 [0.191]	−0.142 [0.195]	−0.116 [0.190]	-0.096 [0.606]		
Adjusted R^2	−0.005	−0.0005	0.002	0.005	0.049	0.007	0.0425
F Statistic	0.556 (df = 5; 427)	0.966 (df = 6; 426)	1.099 (df = 9; 423)	1.234 (df = 10; 422)	2.595 (df = 14; 418)	1.801 (df = 4; 428)	4.843 (df = 5; 427)

$^{***}p < 0.01$, $^{*}*p < 0.05$, $^{*}p < 0.1$

2.3 in which RNSK and SK are negatively correlated at -0.203.

2.6.6 Cross Sectional Analysis

Cross-sectional regression approach is applied following the two-step method by Fama and MacBeth (1973). In the first step, time series OLS regression is used to estimate the betas coefficient for each asset. Then, assuming all betas are constant for the whole sample period, the second step is to run cross-sectional regression at each time period to get the risk premium. Specifically, cross-sectional asset returns are regressed against all constant betas, yielding the risk premium called gamma. Finally, gammas are averaged out to get the averaged estimated risk premiums and their t-statistics are calculated as well. Intuitively, the idea held here is to explore the average risk premium that can be obtained by one unit change risk factor exposure beta. In model set-up, the first step follows as:

$$R_{i,t} = \alpha_i + \beta_{1,i} * EW_t + \beta_{2,i} * TS_t + \beta_{3,i} * HP_t + \beta_{4,i} * MOM_t + \beta_{5,i} * RNSK_t + \varepsilon_{i,t} \tag{2.6.2}$$

where, i is standing for each asset instead of each portfolio in time series regression. R_i is the i^{th} single asset return in the time series dimension. β_i is the i^{th} asset risk exposure coefficients set to risk factors.

In the second step, the estimated beta from the first step is used for explanatory variable:

$$R_{i,t} = \alpha_{i,t} + \gamma_{1,t} * \hat{\beta}_{1,i} + \gamma_{2,t} * \hat{\beta}_{2,i} + \gamma_{3,t} * \hat{\beta}_{3,i} + \gamma_{4,t} * \hat{\beta}_{4,i} + \gamma_{5,t} * \hat{\beta}_{5,i} + \mu_t \tag{2.6.3}$$

To account for "Error-in-Variable" problem (second-step explanatory variables are estimated value from the first step), corrected standard error in the spirit of Shanken (1992) is employed. Results also report cross-sectional correlation adjusted standard error via the idea from Newey and West (1987). RNSK is passed to test with the inclusion of baseline model as well as other commodity risk factors and stock market Fama_French five factors for robustness check.

Table 2.8 and 2.9 show the Fama_Macbeth two-step regression results with consideration on: (1) the baseline model test, (2) case (1) + RNSK factor test and (3) case (1) + case (2) + more importantly Pearson skewness (SK) factor test. Generally speaking, starting from the baseline model (TS, HP and MOM), one or more variables is or are sequentially added in regression test procedure. At the same time, for extra variable(s) adding, statistical property test is conducted for RNSK solely or plus Pearson skewness control effect.

In table 2.8 and 2.9, generally speaking, RNSK shows strong pricing ability across nearly all models (even SK factor is controlled). This can be observed via RNSK coefficients and t statistics values on the first row cross-sectional from the column (3) to (22). In another perspective, RNSK shows non-negligible contribution on regression fittings due to the fact that R^2 is improved in all cases when RNSK is added on. Lastly, RNSK is overall significantly negatively priced with averaged at least annualized premium 15.6% (λ_5 in Equation 2.6.3 is at least 0.3% each week, so annually 0.003 * 52 = 15.6%).

Although this may seemingly counterintuitive, it can be: (1) explained by the negative correlation coefficient among estimated RNSK betas and SK betas at the first step regression results, indicating opposite pricing behaviour, see the second last row, $\rho(\hat{\beta}_{RNSK}, \hat{\beta}_{SK})$, of table 2.8 and 2.9 and (2) consistent with the negative significant pairwise correlation coefficient value from table 2.3.

Besides this, this RNSK negative pricing coefficient is linked to the RNSK pricing mechanism section where trading on options is a selective hedging tool to fight against potential downside risk. Following this idea, RNSK should reflect the same trading direction as HP.C (hedgers) does since both of these two variables refers to large hedgers' market participation direction and the degree of their activities. Correspondingly, speculators' market open interest should be opposite to RNSK. This explanation is confirmed by table 2.4 where post-ranking implied hedgers (speculators) are positively (negatively) correlated with RNSK. The negative signs for HP (speculators) in results from time series (table 2.5) and cross-sectional (table 2.8 and table 2.9) regressions are also consistent with this pricing mechanism.

Table 2.8: Risk-Neutral Skewness Cross-Sectional Fama_Macbeth Regression

	(1)	(2)	(3)	(4)	(5)	(6)	(7)	(8)	(9)
Alpha	-0.00037	0.00059	0.00080	0.00011	0.00048	0.00078	-0.00028	0.00059	0.00080
	(0.00102)	(0.00091)	(0.00099)	(0.00088)	(0.00085)	(0.00092)	(0.00100)	(0.00091)	(0.00099)
	[0.00102]	[0.00091]	[0.00099]	[0.00088]	[0.00085]	[0.00092]	[0.00100]	[0.00091]	[0.00099]
RNSK		-0.00380**	-0.00321*		-0.00390**	-0.00323*		-0.00380**	-0.00321*
		(0.00169)	(0.00173)		(0.00174)	(0.00174)		(0.00170)	(0.00175)
		{0.00170}	{0.00174}		{0.00175}	{0.00175}		{0.00172}	{0.00177}
		[0.00169]	[0.00173]		[0.00174]	[0.00174]		[0.00170]	[0.00175]
TS	0.00289*	0.00264	0.00209	0.00298*	0.00260	0.00209	0.00293*	0.00264	0.00209
	(0.00175)	(0.00176)	(0.00190)	(0.00174)	(0.00175)	(0.00190)	(0.00175)	(0.00177)	(0.00191)
	{0.00176}	{0.00177}	{0.00191}	{0.00175}	{0.00175}	{0.00191}	{0.00176}	{0.00178}	{0.00192}
	[0.00175]	[0.00176]	[0.00190]	[0.00174]	[0.00175]	[0.00190]	[0.00175]	[0.00177]	[0.00191]
MOM	0.00424	0.00787***	0.00864***	0.00430	0.00800***	0.00865***	0.00530*	0.00786***	0.00863***
	(0.00285)	(0.00308)	(0.00319)	(0.00287)	(0.00294)	(0.00312)	(0.00291)	(0.00309)	(0.00323)
	{0.00287}	{0.00311}	{0.00323}	{0.00290}	{0.00297}	{0.00315}	{0.00293}	{0.00312}	{0.00326}
	[0.00285]	[0.00308]	[0.00319]	[0.00287]	[0.00294]	[0.00312]	[0.00291]	[0.00309]	[0.00323]
HP	0.00333**	0.00441***	0.00428***	0.00362***	0.00436***	0.00428***	0.00395***	0.00440***	0.00427***
	(0.00133)	(0.00138)	(0.00137)	(0.00144)	(0.00144)	(0.00142)	(0.00147)	(0.00148)	(0.00146)
	{0.00133}	{0.00139}	{0.00137}	{0.00144}	{0.00145}	{0.00143}	{0.00148}	{0.00149}	{0.00147}
	[0.00133]	[0.00138]	[0.00137]	[0.00144]	[0.00144]	[0.00142]	[0.00147]	[0.00148]	[0.00146]
CV				0.00030	-0.00076	-0.00107			
				(0.00131)	(0.00139)	(0.00149)			
				{0.00132}	{0.00140}	{0.00150}			
				[0.00131]	[0.00139]	[0.00149]			
LIQUID							-0.00307	-0.00177	-0.00195
							(0.00282)	(0.00287)	(0.00290)
							{0.00288}	{0.00293}	{0.00297}
							[0.00282]	[0.00287]	[0.00290]
SK			0.00534			0.00529			0.00534
			(0.00558)			(0.00541)			(0.00560)
			{0.00595}			{0.00575}			{0.00597}
			[0.00558]			[0.00541]			[0.00560]
FAMA_FRENCH									
$\rho(\hat{\beta}_{RNSK}, \hat{\beta}_{SK})$			-0.61053			-0.70244			-0.61053
Adj. R^2	0.17210	0.21580	0.23848	0.22060	0.26645	0.28666	0.19944	0.24602	0.27193

$^{***}p < 0.01$, $^{*}*p < 0.05$, $^{*}p < 0.1$

Fama_Macbeth two step regression are applied for 20 models from left to right marked as (1), ..., (22) based on weekly observation. Risk factors that included in this table are listed on the first column. Similar to time-series analysis, except for the first column listing all independent variable names, from second column afterwards, odd column is for target model while even column is for robustness check with extra consideration on SK factor. All standard errors are listed underneath estimated coefficient with round bracket for normal standard error, squared bracket for adjusted error by autocorrelation and heterogeneity with lag 12 based on (Newey and West, 1987) and curly bracket for adjusted error by error in variable (EIV) problem proposed by (Shanken, 1992). FMAMA_FRENCH row stands for whether Fama_French five factors are taken into controlled in cross-sectional regression (Y = Yes, Blank = No). $\rho(\hat{\beta}_{RNSK}, \hat{\beta}_{SK})$ row reports correlation coefficient between estimated betas: RNSK and SK in the first time series step of Fama_Macbeth. The last row in table reports adjusted R^2 for each regression.

Table 2.9: Risk-Neutral Skewness Cross-Sectional Fama_Macbeth Regression Continues

	(10)	(11)	(12)	(13)	(14)	(15)	(16)	(17	(18)	(19)	(20)
	-0.00032 (0.00089) [0.00089]	0.00054 (0.00085) [0.00085]	0.00077 (0.00090) [0.00090]	-0.00050 (0.00104) [0.00104]	0.00040 (0.00099) [0.00099]	0.00065 (0.00112) [0.00112]	0.00021 (0.00137) [0.00137]	0.00062 (0.00136) [0.00136]	0.00077 (0.00153) [0.00153]	0.00025 (0.00098) [0.00098]	0.00059 (0.00111) [0.00111]
RNSK		-0.00395** (0.00167) {0.00168} [0.00167]	-0.00330** (0.00163) {0.00164} [0.00163]		-0.00353* (0.00184) {0.00186} [0.00184]	-0.00312* (0.00182) {0.00184} [0.00182]		-0.00366** (0.00169) {0.00170} [0.00169]	-0.00350** (0.00172) {0.00173} [0.00172]	-0.00374* (0.00195) {0.00197} [0.00195]	-0.00322* (0.00192) {0.00193} [0.00192]
TS	0.00295* (0.00175) {0.00176} [0.00175]	0.00253 (0.00176) {0.00177} [0.00176]	0.00208 (0.00190) {0.00192} [0.00190]	0.00142 (0.00199) {0.00200} [0.00199]	0.00213 (0.00204) {0.00206} [0.00204]	0.00184 (0.00210) {0.00212} [0.00210]	0.00022 (0.00226) {0.00228} [0.00226]	0.00163 (0.00217) {0.00218} [0.00217]	0.00160 (0.00218) {0.00220} [0.00218]	0.00196 (0.00209) {0.00210} [0.00209]	0.00176 (0.00212) {0.00214} [0.00212]
MOM	0.00387 (0.00326) {0.00330} [0.00326]	0.00862*** (0.00334) {0.00337} [0.00334]	0.00891*** (0.00341) {0.00345} [0.00341]	0.00609** (0.00292) {0.00295} [0.00292]	0.00804*** (0.00306) {0.00309} [0.00306]	0.00865*** (0.00319) {0.00322} [0.00319]	0.00752** (0.00355) {0.00359} [0.00355]	0.00852** (0.00367) {0.00373} [0.00367]	0.00854** (0.00368) {0.00373} [0.00368]	0.00805** (0.00330) {0.00334} [0.00330]	0.00860** (0.00348) {0.00352} [0.00348]
HP	0.00325*** (0.00139) {.001400} [0.00139]	0.00459*** (0.00144) {0.00144} [0.00144]	0.00436*** (0.00138) {0.00139} [0.00138]	0.00378*** 0(.00134) {0.00135} [0.00134]	0.00442*** (0.00138) {0.00139} [0.00138]	0.00431*** (0.00136) {0.00136} [0.00136]	0.00563*** (0.00176) {0.00177} [0.00176]	0.00508*** (0.00172) {0.00173} [0.00172]	0.00488*** (0.00169) {0.00170} [0.00169]	0.00415** (0.00177) {0.00178} [0.00177]	0.00420** (0.00178) {0.00180} [0.00178]
CV										-0.00064 (0.00157) {0.00158} [0.00157]	-0.00090 (0.00165) {0.00166} [0.00165]
LIQUID										-0.00088 (0.00338) {0.00349} [0.00338]	-0.00147 (0.00353) {0.00366} [0.00353]
ΔOP	-0.00065 (0.00273) {0.00278} [0.00273]	0.00055 (0.00272) {0.00276} [0.00272]	-0.00017 (0.00278) {0.00282} [0.00278]							-0.00005 (0.00243) {0.00247} [0.00243]	-0.00031 (0.00250) {0.00253} [0.00250]
IDIOSK				0.00206 (0.00228) {0.00231} [0.00228]	-0.00019 (0.00287) {0.00293} [0.00287]	-0.00082 (0.00305) {0.00312} [0.00305]				-0.00006 (0.00280) {0.00286} [0.00280]	-0.00067 (0.00306) {0.00313} [0.00306]
SK			0.00507 (0.00549) {0.00584} [0.00549]			0.00469 (0.00577) {0.00618} [0.00577]			0.00278 (0.00656) {0.00716} [0.00656]		0.00436 (0.00592) {0.00636} [0.00592]
FAMA_FRENCH							Y	Y	Y		
$\rho(\hat{\beta}_{RNSK}, \hat{\beta}_{SK})$			-0.62103			-0.60661			-0.64047		-0.22011
Adj. R^2	0.22175	0.26515	0.28326	0.21858	0.27583	0.29937	0.33634	0.38832	0.41430	0.36266	0.39105

$^{***}p < 0.01$, $^{*}*p < 0.05$, $^{*}p < 0.1$

Regarding the results from other factors, HP and MOM, in general, are significantly positively priced across all scenarios. A positive significant evidence is witnessed on TS factor, while this effect disappears when RNSK is well controlled. For MOM to work, this might due to increasing market trading trend following the recent financial crisis as assets are marked as high correlation in this period. Meanwhile, strong heterogeneous beliefs about underlying are well formed when market is under extreme uncertainty, which supports HP pricing effect somehow.

As for explaining the TS factor pricing effect, after financial crisis, there might be a sluggish reaction on the physical production side of commodity market, yielding an increasing and stacked inventory. Argued by Fama and French (1988) who state that spot and future price will vary similarly when underlying inventory is high, deviating from what theory of storage suggests. This might be one potential explanation for TS factor as the signal implied from spot and future price relation may suggest the loss of the cost of carry and convenience yield premium when inventory is high.

Other factors from the commodity literature do not show significant effect in cross-sectional regression even though regression fittings R^2 are somehow increased. Whether controlling the stock market implied factors does not make a difference from table 2.9. To sum up, RNSK has strong conditional pricing ability across all scenarios and its effect can be not ignored.

2.7 Conclusion

This chapter investigates the relation between the Risk-Neutral Skewness and commodity futures return in both time-series and cross-sectional approaches. Comparison between the Risk-Neutral Skewness and the realised Pearson skewness suggested by Fernandez-Perez et al. (2018) is conducted along all analysis parts. Evidence shows that Risk-Neutral Skewness is positively related to the subsequent futures contract return. A portfolio formed by longing commodities with the high Risk-Neutral Skewness and shorting commodities with the low Risk-Neutral Skewness will generate significant positive return, which can be not explained by the traditional factors. Strategy abnormal return is robust in all cases where the baseline model and other commodity risk factors suggested from the commodity literature are controlled.

On practical view, the Risk-Neutral Skewness is superior to the realised skewness in terms of nearly all portfolio performance statistics. Moreover, this new factor is easier to calculate without special care on the past window length selection and is well controlled without bias, which are two aspects mostly argued on the realised skewness calculation method. From its characteristics, this new risk factor is partly linked to backwardation theory suggested from commodity futures Basis and HP. Far more than, the pricing mechanism behind this new factor is more centred at over-pricing (under-pricing) idea within framework of net buying pressure (high margins requirement), heterogeneous belief and selective hedging ideas.

Chapter 3

Term Structure Mean Change Detection

Seeing the recent commodity futures term structure modelling popularity and motivated by the recent yield curve modelling change detection research findings, a new functional change detection procedure (via Kolmogorov-Smirnov functional form) is proposed and investigated under the alternative. Monte Carlo simulation shows decent testing power and converging rejection probability when the change size is large enough. Consistent with the literature, change detection performance is subjected to the inclusion of break points (controlling the heterogeneous effect outside of model) in the error curve volatility process. The empirical finite sample analysis tested on the gold and oil futures market suggest different change locations which are mainly correspondent to financial crisis. Multivariate forecasting regression shows that trading behaviour in the gold market after change points is captured and controlled by traditional Producers while oil market is attributed to Hedgers and Speculators' trading activity.

3.1 Introduction

Motivated by the recent increasing popularity of commodity futures price term structure modelling and forecasting studies via the factor model, specifically the Nelson-Siegel model (NS) (Nelson and Siegel, 1987) and the Dynamic Nelson-Siegel model (DNS) (Diebold and Rudebusch, 2013), a natural question comes to mind is that whether this specific factor model can explain term structure variation in the commodity futures market. One argument for this is on model validation as these two models mentioned above are initialised for dealing with yield curve data in rates products rather than futures market.

The yield curve and futures prices are somehow comparable in the view of similar data structure, namely term structure (for each daily observation, different time-to-maturity contracts can be recorded). However, futures market, especially commodity futures market has been exposed to more heterogeneous characters' effects (supply and demand shocks from Routledge et al. (2000), seasonality impact from Sørensen (2002), speculating and hedging activities from De Roon et al. (2000)). Mapping NS/DNS model directly to futures data modelling needs more considerate concerns and tests.

Furthermore, with the reference to the yield curve studies, recent results have been focusing on data change detection, modelling and forecasting with extensions on the pure DNS factor model (e.g. adaptive method with including structural change for better forecasting by Chen and Niu (2014), better and robust forecasting recorded under the regime-switching model with reversible jump Markov Chain Monte Carlo method by Xiang and Zhu (2013) and its extension with macro variables by Zhu and Rahman (2015), Hidden Markov Chain estimation method with parameter change by Nieh et al. (2010)).

Summarising the above research outcomes indicates that model stability becomes a sever concern when applying DNS model on yield curve data. It is smooth to link this concern back to the DNS application on futures market and then argue that model validation and further extensions on a pure DNS model are necessary.

Some relevant futures market DNS modelling studies are listed in the following: GrØnborg and Lunde (2016) obtain better forecasting results by including the GARCH model with Normal Inverse Gaussian innovation under the copula framework, Baruník and Malinska (2016) apply the artificial neural networks (ANN) on modelling DNS suggested beta coefficients and document its outperformance to the benchmark model in terms of different time-to-maturity contracts' price forecasting, Karstanje et al. (2017) find the best fitting via generalising DNS model with seasonality, market and sector impact consideration.

However, none of them pay attention to the DNS model stability, which leads to the contribution of this chapter that is going to fill this gap by investigating the potential change point under the DNS model fitting of commodity futures data. For the sake of the testing model stability, this chapter proposes to use a new test statistics and procedure under the framework of functional data analysis.

Before introducing on the functional method, at this writing moment, we do aware that there is a large literature group discussing time series structure change detection method. Hypothesis tests have been set up for detecting a unkonw break location, for some study about it, readers are referred to some theories and finance applications by (Bai and Perron, 1998, Chu et al., 1996, Davis et al., 2006, Csörgö and Horváth, 1997, Aue and Horváth, 2013 as well as other literatures cited inside and referred on it.). But, all of them studeis are limited on one single time series detection, which is not suitable for this chapter as what this chapter care about is to explore detection procedure on a collection of time series (per maturity) data representing an entire term structure.

Presenting and analysing data in a functional way has been experiencing an increasing trend over the decade. This is attributed to the special property of functional modelling of handling data that is out of the explanation framework of either scalar or vector observation. Its natural and parsimonious way of describing data has been widely used in sparse data smoothing and modelling, statistical inference and forecasting (Ramsay, 2006, Horváth and Kokoszka, 2012, Berkes et al., 2009, Kargin and Onatski, 2008 and Kokoszka and Reimherr, 2013).

The specific statistical testing procedure used in this chapter is inspired by the recent new mean change detection procedure by Bardsley et al. (2017) in which functional statistics is introduced with a careful investigation on large sample asymptotic properties. Standing on the same framework, this chapter extends their current findings by exploring a new functional statistics' (Kolmogorov-Smirnov functional) large sample property under an alternative hypothesis and discussing its testing power further. This chapter further includes an empirical data analysis to uncover the economic intuition behind the mean changes. In a straightforward way, the regression analysis is employed to analyse the commodity futures subsample market data divided by change point location.

With respect to the change point detection, the simple scalar, single time series as well as multivariate series have been studied for the past several decades starting from the inspection control CUSUM test by Page (1954). More recent extensions on linear, panel data and functional data can be referred to survey papers by Aue and Horváth (2013) and Horváth and Rice (2014). Although changes can happen in both the first order and the second order, this chapter focuses on the first order (mean) change only (see (Csörgö and Horváth, 1997)) as involving the second order property cause complex asymptotic theory even in the simple independent normal case (Horváth, 1993).

In the line of functional change point detection, the sample difference change point test is proposed (see, change point in the functional linear operators in functional linear model by Horváth et al. (2009), functional principal component analysis based change detection via bootstrap by Benko et al.

(2009), general functional observation mean change detection by Horváth et al. (2013)). Functional projection method is another branch of this testing procedure. A general functional data generating process change detection proposed by (Berkes et al., 2009 and Aue, Gabrys, Horváth and Kokoszka, 2009) under independent innovations assumption, under weekly dependent innovations assumption by Hörmann et al. (2010). However, all of these statistics forms are in weighted form with penalisation on the corresponding eigenvalues.

Following Bardsley et al. (2017), assumptions for the innovation terms dependence structure is also adopted in this chapter, which shows a more general fitting to real data (Aue, Hörmann, Horváth, Reimherr et al., 2009, Hörmann et al., 2013, Kokoszka and Reimherr, 2013 and Aue et al., 2012). For comprehensive summary on the functional data analysis, relevant survey paper by Horváth and Rice (2015) is well recommended.

In terms of the selection of pre-determined factors (used to project infinite dimensional functional curve data onto finite vectors), well-defined orthonormal basis function factors (e.g. Fourier and Spline basis) are normally used due to their well-known function properties. However, this automatically leads to one question that how to interpret the meaning behind the change point with respect to those selected functional factors. Recent studies from Chib and Kang (2012) who adopt macroeconomic factors and Bardsley et al. (2017) who use the Dynamic Nelson-Siegel model (Diebold and Rudebusch, 2013) suggested factors give a more interpretable idea behind this change. Implied by data structure, a new functional detection statistic formed in this chapter is based on DNS implied factors.

Regarding the strength of these factors, the DNS three factors (*"Level"*, *"Slope"* and *"Curvature"*) have been argued with respect to its validity (e.g. Lengwiler and Lenz (2010) propose new factors called intelligible factors, stating better interpretation and Hays et al. (2012) model DNS beta coefficients in a functional dynamic way). Despite the potential disadvantages of DNS model factors mentioned above, the fundamental reasons for using DNS in this chapter is mainly due to its wider documentation in the literature (from the initial fixed factor approach see Nelson and Siegel (1987), to time-varying approach by (Diebold and Li, 2006 and Diebold and Rudebusch, 2013 and also other cited studies in their reference and based on them). Another two concerns of testing DNS is (1) for the sake of comparison with reference studies by Bardsley et al. (2017), (2) easy interpretation and implementation from the real data perspective.

On the page of the DNS, lambda (λ) a parameter in model, defined as to measuring the maturity decaying effect, is introduced with time variation property rather than being constant by Hautsch and Ou (2012) and Koopman et al. (2010). However, the fitting and forecasting results suggest that no significance improvement is observed when taking time varying lambda into consideration. This chapter will ignore this time-varying lambda idea and keep lambda fixed.

In addition to this, it is worth mentioning that, the possibilities of change point in lambda may cause functional detection procedure bias in the time dimension. If this is the case, the DNS model factors suggested from this scenario (where lambda value is not stable) will not be proper to use in the following testing procedure. To account for this problem, robust check is conducted with projecting data onto basis function, denoted as fully functional method in Bardsley et al. (2017).

Regarding the main contributions to the commodity futures literature, up to now, there is no any functional change point detection method discussion formed on Kolmogorov-Smirnov functional, any empirical functional change detection application on global commodity futures market data and further regression analysis on subsamples to quantify structure change driving force. To sum up, this chapter is going to achieve the following points in the end. Firstly, exploring new functional change point detection statistics with clear document on both large sample property and testing power performance. Secondly, empirically providing evidence on data structure mean change of DNS model fitting via real time commodity futures data. Thirdly, the market driving force behind the mean change of DNS method is evidenced and explained.

The structure of this chapter is organized as follows: section 2 is the methodology description on how the Dynamic Nelson-Siegel model is formed, section 3 is functional models and projected method specification, section 4 shows simulation implementation details; section 5 refers to the empirical data description and analysis, section 6 concludes all findings on the simulation and empirical data analysis. Theoretical proofs in section 3 are presented in the Appendix B.

3.2 Dynamic Nelson-Siegel Model Estimation

Capturing the term structure price movement on different maturities bases, the DNS model shows different variations given different parameters and factor forms. Apart from the time-varying effect, a decaying factor, λ, allocates DNS modelling emphasise by placing different weights on different maturities' contracts. In practical way, estimated optimal lambda is chosen to fix the shape of three factors in DNS. As this estimation process, grid search and optimization are adopted following studies in government bond yield curve application by (Diebold and Li, 2006). DNS is formulated as follows:

$$X_t(\tau) = \beta_{t,1} + \beta_{t,2}\left(\frac{1-e^{-\lambda\tau}}{\lambda\tau}\right) + \beta_{t,3}\left(\frac{1-e^{-\lambda\tau}}{\lambda\tau} - e^{-\lambda\tau}\right) + \varepsilon_t(\tau) \qquad (3.2.1)$$

where, subscript t is for time dimension, τ is for maturity, $X_t(\tau)$ is data observation with respect to time-to-maturity τ observed at time t, $\beta_{t,1}$ is the first factor with a constant corresponding factor loading which is independent of time and λ value, measuring the long-time variation of term structure. $\beta_{t,2}$ is the second factor with factor loading $\left(\frac{1-e^{-\lambda\tau}}{\lambda\tau}\right)$ in DNS model gauging the fitting of short time contract data variation, $\beta_{t,3}$ is the third factor with factor loading $\left(\frac{1-e^{-\lambda\tau}}{\lambda\tau} - e^{-\lambda\tau}\right)$ measuring the middle term of contract data variation.

In the literature of the commodity futures market, the DNS three factors are not only the main components explaining the dynamics of term structure variation (e.g. PCA forecasting method Chantziara and Skiadopoulos (2008)) but also delegating economical meaning, denoted as *"Level"* (the average price level shift across all time-to-maturity contracts), *"Slope"* (presenting the relative strength between the short and long term price change, indicating market situation on backwardation or contango and forming an important factor called basis term structure Fernandez-Perez et al. (2017*b*)) and *"Curvature"* (controlling middle time-to-maturity contract, showing expectation shift speed in commodity futures market) respectively.

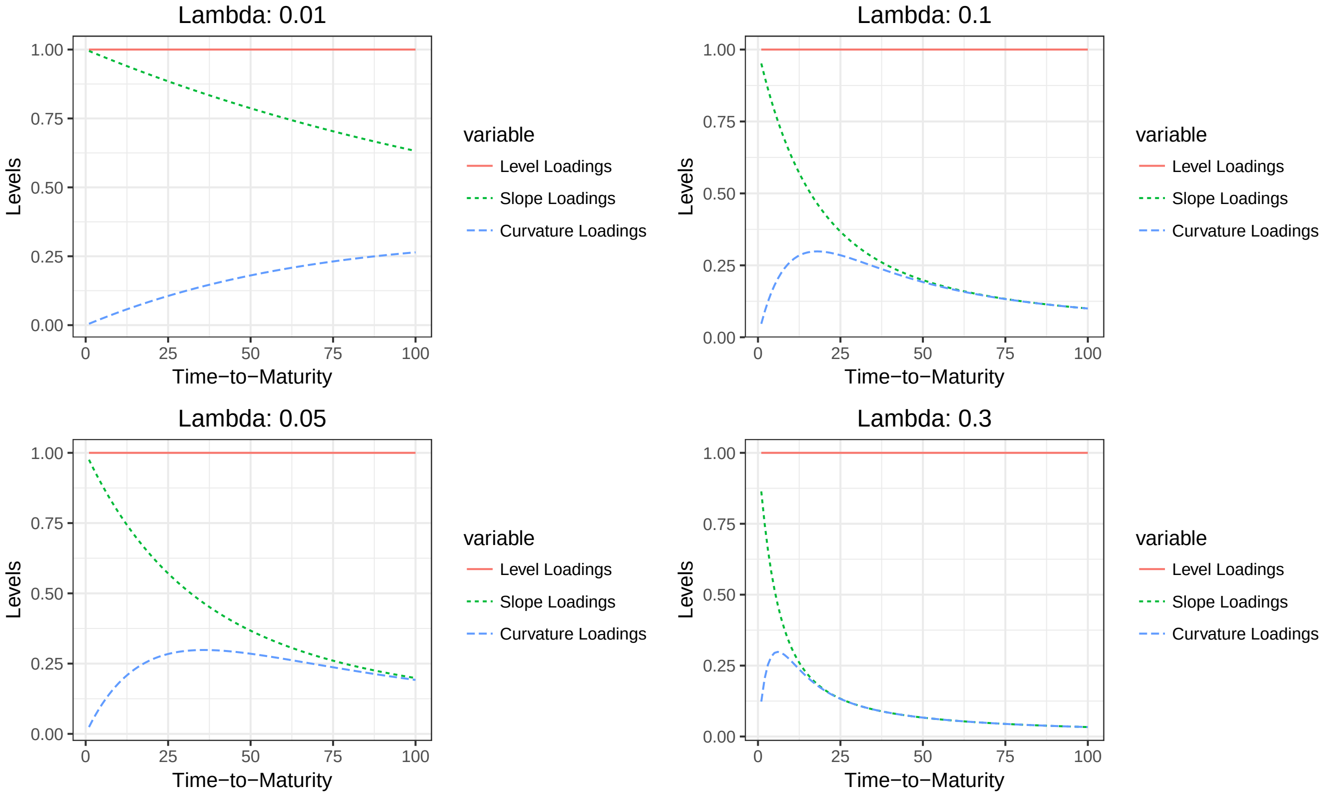
More importantly, λ in this formula adjusts the importance within last two factors. In the yield curve literature Diebold and Li (2006) and Diebold and Rudebusch (2013) optimize the λ estimation based on maximizing middle term fitting. While this differs in futures market (GrØnborg and Lunde (2016) and Baruník and Malinska (2016)), in which lambda is carried out by standard error square minimization. For the sake of demonstrating how sensitive and responsive of factor shape to different values of lambda, figure 3.1 shows four examples about sensitivities of 'Slope' and *"Curvature"* factors when decaying parameters are changed while *"Level"* factor stay constant for all cases.

It is clear to state that the larger the λ value, the higher the factor will be placed on the short-term maturity contract. When the λ value is equal to 0.1, factor value over 0.5 are put on the contract with maturity less than around 12[32] in x-axis figure 3.1 with second factor declining quickly and third factor peak at this point.

In this chapter, grid search method is applied to find out the best lambda value (in terms of minimizing the sum of squared error over time) for fixing the shape of the DNS three factors. The first step

[32] which can be scaled in reality, here the magnitude of 12 is for example

Figure 3.1: Sensitivity of Dynamic Nelson-Siegel Model to Lambda Values



Note: this figure shows how shapes of three factors change in the response to the change of lambda values. Factor loadings are plotted with red solid line for "Level" factor, green dot line for "Slope" factor and blue dash line for "Curvature" line from the top to bottom, left to right, in terms of lambda value of 0.01, 0.05, 0.1 and 0.3.

is composed of a fine grid search. During each search, one λ is selected and assigned to the cross-sectional linear regression method. Given the estimation results from the first step, the best lambda will be extracted out in terms of the minimum value of squared error summation in the previous step and its corresponding model coefficients (three latent time-series factors) are obtained in a time-series manner (OLS method).

3.3 Functional Models and Projected Method

Following the functional change point test framework in Bardsley et al. (2017), the functional observation $X_t(i)$ is modelled by the curves

$$X_t(i) = \sum_{k=1}^{K} B_{t,k} f_k(i) + \varepsilon_t(i) \tag{3.3.1}$$

where, $X_t(i)$ is t^{th} functional observation, in this chapter, referred to time dimension , $f_k(i)$ is known k dimensional factors. K is the total number of functions used for the linear representation of the mean of $X_t(i)$. On the framework of DNS model, $K = 3$ and the function $f_k(i)$ can be then referred to *"Level"* (k=1), *"Slope"* (k=2) and *"Curvature"* (k=3). The functions $f_k(i)$ are assumed to be linearly independent, but the asymptotic results are not affected if this assumption does not hold. The random coefficient $B_{t,k}$ can be written as:

$$B_{t,k} = \mu_{t,k} + b_{t,k}, \quad E[b_{t,k}] = 0 \tag{3.3.2}$$

The hypothesis of a constant functional mean is stated as:

$$H_0: \quad \mu_{\mathbf{1}} = \mu_{\mathbf{2}} = \cdots = \mu_{\mathbf{N}}, \tag{3.3.3}$$

where

$$\mu_t = [\mu_{t,1}, \mu_{t,2}, \ldots, \mu_{t,K}]^T,$$

Under the alternative hypothesis, let $r_1 < r_2 < \cdots < r_R$ denote the time of change in the functional mean, in which $r_0 = 0$ and $r_{R+1} = N$, therefore the number of change point in the functional mean is

R and the means after changes are $\mu_1^*, \mu_2^*, \ldots, \mu_{R+1}^*$, see

$$H_A: \quad \mu_t = \mu_m^*, \quad if \quad r_{m-1} < t \leq r_m, \quad 1 \leq t \leq N \tag{3.3.4}$$

Under the null hypothesis, the mean is assumed to be unchanged while error structure of $(\sum_{k=1}^{K} b_{t,k} f_k(i) + \varepsilon_t(i))$ is allowed to change at certain time point, called break point, say t_m:

$$1 = t_0 < t_1 < t_2 < t_3 < \cdots < t_M < t_{M+1} = N,$$

The data are second order stationary on the interval $(t_\ell, t_{\ell+1}]$ with $1 \leq \ell \leq M$ and the purpose of above statement is to detect the mean change regardless of the second order (variance and covariance) behaviour of error curve. Intuitively, break point is an idea stating possible exogenous information inclusion in the data generating process, which could be government intervention impact on data like yield curve, spot market demand and supply temporary shock from market or OPEC announcement for commodity futures market and oil related future products.

For example, it is natural to choose the point as the day when financial market reflects a strong signal like Lehman Brother Bankruptcy in 2008. Statistical procedure of testing the constant mean change normally requires estimation of long run covariance matrix. However, due to possible breaks in the covariance structure, estimation procedure without this consideration might result in misleading outcome.

Following the framework in Bardsley et al. (2017), the test statistics are obtained as functions of the CUSUM process of projections:

$$\alpha_N(x) = N^{-\frac{1}{2}} \left(\sum_{t=1}^{\lfloor Nx \rfloor} \mathbf{z}_t - \frac{\lfloor Nx \rfloor}{N} \sum_{t=1}^{N} \mathbf{z}_t \right), \quad 0 \leq x \leq 1, \tag{3.3.5}$$

where, $\lfloor . \rfloor$ denotes the integer value and $< . >$ is the inner product,

$$\mathbf{z}_t = [< X_t, f_1 >, \ldots, < X_t, f_K >], \tag{3.3.6}$$

Rather than using the Cramer-von-Mises functional of $\alpha_N(x)$, Kolmogorov-Smirnov statistics is employed.

$$K_N = \sup_{0 \leq x \leq 1} \|\mathbf{a}_N(x)\|, \tag{3.3.7}$$

where, $\|.\|$ stands for the norm in the $\Re^K$. According to **Theorem 3.1** in Bardsley et al. (2017), under H_0,

$$\alpha_N(x) \to \mathbf{G}^0(x), \quad \text{in} \quad D^K([0,1])$$

where the process $\mathbf{G}^0$ is defined by

$$\mathbf{G}^0(x) = G(x) - xG(1), \quad 0 \leq x \leq 1, \tag{3.3.8}$$

and $G(x)$, $x \in [0,1]$, is a mean zero $\Re^K$-valued Gaussian process with covariance:

$$E\left(\mathbf{G}(x)\mathbf{G}(y)^T\right) = \sum_{j=1}^{m} \left(\theta_j - \theta_{j-1}\right)\mathbf{V}_j + (x - \theta_m)\mathbf{V}_{m+1}, \quad \theta_m \leq x \leq \theta_{m+1}, \quad y \geq x,$$

$\mathbf{V}$ is a long-run matrix given by:

$$V_m = \sum_{l=-\infty}^{\infty} Cov\left(w\left(a_t^m\right), w\left(a_{t+l}^m\right)\right),$$

where, w is a known function, a_t^m is defined in Assumption 1 and 2 of Bardsley et al. (2017)

It is followed immediately from the equation (3.3.8) that,

$$K_N \xrightarrow{D} \sup_{0 \leq x \leq 1} \|\mathbf{G}^0(x)\|, \tag{3.3.9}$$

and based on the equation (3.3.9), the functional statistic can be approximated with the supreme of norm of $\mathbf{G}^0$. The Gaussian process $\mathbf{G}^0(x)$ can be represented as an infinite sum using the Karhunen-Loéve expansion, namely,

$$\mathbf{G}^0(x) = \textstyle\sum_{j=1}^{\infty} \lambda_j^{1/2} Z_j \phi_j(x),$$

therefore,

$$\sup_{0\le x\le 1} \|\mathbf{G}^0(x)\| = \sup_{0\le x\le 1} \|\sum_{j=1}^{\infty} \lambda_j^{1/2} Z_j \phi_j(x)\|, \tag{3.3.10}$$

where, j denotes j^{th} observation, $\lambda_1 \ge \lambda_2 \ge \ldots$, are the eigenvalues of covariance kernel $\mathbf{R}(x,y) = E(\mathbf{G}^0(x)\mathbf{G}^0(y)^T)$, $\phi_j(x)$ is eigenfunctions of $\mathbf{R}$ and $Z_1, Z_2, \ldots$ are independent standard normal random variables. The eigenfunctions are orthonormal and satisfy:

$$\int_0^1 \mathbf{R}(x,y)\,\phi_j(y)dy = \lambda_j \phi_j(x), \quad j = 1,2,\ldots \tag{3.3.11}$$

It is shown in the Bardsley et al. (2017) that $\mathbf{R}(x,y)$ is unknown and must be estimated from the sample. They suggest that $\hat{\mathbf{R}}(x,y)$, a kernel estimated from the sample satisfying the condition,

$$\textstyle\int_0^1 \int_0^1 \|\hat{\mathbf{R}}(x,y) - \mathbf{R}(x,y)\| \xrightarrow{p} 0$$

Defining the empirical eigenvalues $\hat{\lambda}_i$ and eigenfunction $\hat{\phi}_i(x)$ by,

$$\textstyle\int_0^1 \hat{\mathbf{R}}(x,y)\,\hat{\phi}_j(y)dy = \hat{\lambda}_j \hat{\phi}_j(x), \quad j = 1,2,\ldots,$$

and approximate $\mathbf{G}^0(x)$ by,

$$\mathbf{G}^0(x) = \textstyle\sum_{j=1}^{\infty} \hat{\lambda}_j^{1/2} Z_j \hat{\phi}_j(x),$$

where, $Z_1, Z_2, \ldots$ are independent standard normal random variables.

In the empirical and simulation, calculation of $\mathbf{R}(x,y)$ is replaced by computing covariance of $\mathbf{G}^0(x)$, which is as follows,

$$
\begin{aligned}
\mathbf{R}(x,y) = E\left(\mathbf{G}^0(x)\mathbf{G}^0(y)^T\right) \\
&= (1-y)[\sum_{j=1}^{m}(\theta_j-\theta_{j-1})\mathbf{V}_j+(x-\theta_m)\mathbf{V}_{m+1}] \\
&\quad -x[\sum_{j=1}^{m'}(\theta_j-\theta_{j-1})\mathbf{V}_j+(x-\theta_{m'})\mathbf{V}_{m'+1}] \\
&\quad +xy\sum_{j=1}^{M+1}(\theta_j-\theta_{j-1})\mathbf{V}_j, \quad (3.3.12)
\end{aligned}
$$

where $0 \leq x \leq y \leq 1$, $\theta_m \leq x \leq \theta_{m+1}$, and $\theta_{m'} \leq y \leq \theta_{m'+1}$.

To state the results under the alternative, a matrix C is then introduced,

$$C = \{< f_i, f_j >, \quad 1 \leq i, j \leq k\}, \tag{3.3.13}$$

since f_k for $k = 1, 2, \ldots, K$ are assumed to be linearly independent, stating that C^{-1} exists, $\mathbf{z}_t$ is now written as,

$$\mathbf{z}_t = C\mu_t + \gamma_t, \tag{3.3.14}$$

where, γ_t is the error term.

Using the definition of $\mathbf{z}_t$ and get,

$$E(\mathbf{z}_t) = c\mu_t^*, \quad if \quad r_{m-1} < t \leq r_m, \quad 1 \leq t \leq N \tag{3.3.15}$$

and then the assumption of change points in the mean occurring at $r_1 < r_2 < r_3 < \cdots < r_K$ means that,

$$\lim_{N\to\infty} N^{-1/2}\delta_N(t,m) = \infty, \quad t < m, \quad 1 \le t < m < R \tag{3.3.16}$$

where,

$$\delta_N(t,m) = \max_{t\le k\le m}\left\| \sum_{\ell=t}^{k}\mu_\ell^*(r_\ell - r_{\ell-1}) - \frac{r_k - r_{t-1}}{r_m - r_{t-1}}\sum_{\ell=t}^{m}\mu_\ell^*(r_\ell - r_{\ell-1})\right\|, \tag{3.3.17}$$

the equation (3.3.17) indicates that there is at least one detectable mean change in the subset $\{ X_{r_{t-1}}(i), \ldots, X_{r_m}(i) \}$.

It is easy to see that $\delta_N(t,m)$ compares the means of $\mathbf{z}_t, \mathbf{z}_{t+1}, \ldots, \mathbf{z}_k$, $t \le k \le m$ to the fraction of the total sum of $\mathbf{z}_t, \mathbf{z}_{t+1}, \ldots, \mathbf{z}_m$. If assuming that locations of these changes are proportional to the sample size N,

$$r_t = \lfloor N\tau_t \rfloor, \quad 1 \le t \le R,$$

$$0 = \tau_0 < \tau_1 < \tau_2 < \cdots < \tau_R < \tau_{R+1} = 1,$$

then equation (3.3.16) and (3.3.17) is rewritten,

$$\lim_{N\to\infty} N^{1/2}\delta_N(t,m) = \infty, \quad t < m, \quad 1 \le t < m < R \tag{3.3.18}$$

where,

$$\delta_N(t,m) = \max_{t\le k\le m}\left\| \sum_{\ell=t}^{k}\mu_\ell^*(\tau_\ell - \tau_{\ell-1}) - \frac{\tau_k - \tau_{t-1}}{\tau_m - \tau_{t-1}}\sum_{\ell=t}^{m}\mu_\ell^*(\tau_\ell - \tau_{\ell-1})\right\|, \tag{3.3.19}$$

Let

$$\alpha_N^*(x) = N^{-\frac{1}{2}}\left(\sum_{t=1}^{\lfloor Nx\rfloor}(\mathbf{z}_t - E(\mathbf{z}_t))\frac{\lfloor Nx\rfloor}{N}\sum_{t=1}^{N}(\mathbf{z}_t - E(\mathbf{z}_t))\right), \tag{3.3.20}$$

under the null hypothesis, $\alpha_N^*(x) = \alpha_N(x)$ and assumptions of Theorem 3.1 of Bardsley et al. (2017)

are satisfied, then will have,

$$\sup_{0\le x\le 1} \|\alpha_N(x)\| = Op(1) \tag{3.3.21}$$

THEOREM 3.1 If conditions from the equations (3.3.18), (3.3.19) and (3.3.20) are satisfied, then,

$$\sup_{0\le x\le 1} \|\alpha_N(x)\| \xrightarrow{P} \infty, \tag{3.3.22}$$

This implies the consistency of the testing procedure for the validity of H_0. H_0 is rejected if $K_N \geq \hat{k}_N(\alpha)$, where $1-\alpha$ is the significance and $\hat{k}_N(\alpha)$ is the empirical significance level computed from the data. If H_0 holds, then

$$\lim_{N\to\infty} P\{K_N \geq \hat{k}_N(\alpha)\} = \alpha, \tag{3.3.23}$$

while under the change point alternative,

$$\lim_{N\to\infty} P\{K_N \geq \hat{k}_N(\alpha)\} = 1 \tag{3.3.24}$$

In the testing procedure, binary segmentation method is used to divide the data into mean stationary subsets. Let,

$$K_N(t,m) = (m-t)^{-\frac{1}{2}} \sup_{0\le x\le 1} \left\| \sum_{\ell=t+1}^{\lfloor (m-t)x\rfloor + t} \mathbf{z}_\ell - \frac{\lfloor (m-t)x\rfloor}{(m-t)} \sum_{\ell=t+1}^{j} \mathbf{z}_\ell \right\| \tag{3.3.25}$$

The statistics $K_N(t,m)$ is computed from the observations $X_{t+1}(i),\ldots,X_m(i)$ only. The estimator of a change in the mean of the observations $X_{t+1}(i),\ldots,X_m(i)$ is defined by,

$$\hat{r}(t,m) = \min\left\{ k \in [t+1,\ldots,m] : (m-t)^{-\frac{1}{2}} K_N(t,m) = (m-t)^{-1/2} \left\| \sum_{\ell=t+1}^{k} \mathbf{z}_\ell - \frac{k-i}{(m-t)} \sum_{\ell=t+1}^{m} \mathbf{z}_\ell \right\| \right\} \tag{3.3.26}$$

According to the binary segmentation method, H_0 is rejected and find $\hat{r}_1 = \hat{r}(0,N)$ if $K_N(0,N) \geq$

$\hat{k}_N(0,N,\alpha)$[33]. Then it tests whether $K_N(0,\hat{r}_1)$ and $K_N(\hat{r}_1,N)$ are above their corresponding critical values. If $K_N(0,\hat{r}_1)$ is above its critical value, $\hat{r}_2 = \hat{r}(0,\hat{r}_1)$ is computed and sample $X_1,\dots,X_{\hat{r}_1}$ is divide into subsets $X_1,\dots,X_{\hat{r}_2}$ and $X_{\hat{r}_2},\dots,X_{\hat{r}_1}$, otherwise $X_1,\dots,X_{\hat{r}_1}$ is a mean stationary subset. This same procedure is applied for $K_N(\hat{r}_1,N)$. By the binary algorithm, sets are separated into $\hat{R}+1$ mean stationary subsequence and corresponding change points found is $\hat{R}$.

THEOREM 3.2 If conditions (3.3.16), (3.3.17) and (3.3.21) are satisfied,

then

$$\lim_{N\to\infty} P\{\hat{R}\geq R\} = 1 \tag{3.3.27}$$

and for all $k\geq 1$,

$$P\{\hat{R}=R+k\}\leq\alpha^k, \quad ,k=1,2,\dots \tag{3.3.28}$$

The algorithm finds that the change points $\hat{r}_1^*,\hat{r}_2^*,\dots,\hat{r}_{\hat{R}}^*$, the size of each change is denoted as,

$$\hat{\delta}_{N,t} = \left\|\sum_{\ell=1}^{\hat{r}_t}\mathbf{z}_\ell - \frac{\hat{r}_t}{N}\sum_{\ell=1}^{N}\mathbf{z}_\ell\right\| \tag{3.3.29}$$

THEOREM 3.3 If conditions of the equations (3.3.16), (3.3.17) and (3.3.21) are satisfied,

then for any $\varepsilon>0$,

$$\lim_{N\to\infty} P\left\{\frac{\hat{r}_t^*}{N}\in\bigcup_{\ell=1}^{M}[\tau_\ell-\varepsilon,\tau_\ell+\varepsilon]\right\} = 1, \quad for \quad all \quad 1\leq t\leq M \tag{3.3.30}$$

According to the **THEOREM 3.3** it is easier to locate the sample where the changes in the mean occur. By the equation (3.3.16) or (3.3.18), the largest change size $\hat{\delta}_{N,t}$ must be much larger than the remaining ones, if there is any, "artificial change points" that are occurring with probability less than

[33]Empirical critical threshold value given sample starting from 0 to N with significance $1-\alpha$

α and corresponding size $\hat{\delta}_{N,t}$'s are much smaller.

3.4 Simulation Study

In this section, Kolmogorov-Smirnov functional statistics proposed in above section is tested under both the null and alternative hypothesis. Functional coefficient processes are generated with functional mean observation including change and excluding change. Monte Carlo method with replication 1000 times is deployed. In the interest of performance comparison from functional statistics (Cramer-von-Mises functional from Bardsley et al. (2017)), simulation settings are the same as they did. Then, sensitivity analysis for Kolmogorov-Smirnov functional statistics with respect to the change magnitude is also conducted.

Real change point location and observed mean values before and after change location are settled in the following rules,

Mean under the Null H_0:

$$\mu = (4.54, -2.82, -3.03)$$

Mean under Change $H_{A(1)}$:

$$\mu_t = \begin{pmatrix} 4.54 \\ -2.82 \\ -3.03 \end{pmatrix}, \quad t \leq \frac{N}{2}; \quad \mu_t = \begin{pmatrix} 4.2 \\ -3.0 \\ -3.2 \end{pmatrix}, \quad t > \frac{N}{2}$$

Mean under Change $H_{A(2)}$:

$$\mu_t = \begin{pmatrix} 4.54 \\ -2.82 \\ -3.03 \end{pmatrix}, \quad t \leq \tfrac{N}{2}; \quad \mu_t = \begin{pmatrix} 3.89 \\ -3.32 \\ -3.32 \end{pmatrix}, \quad t > \tfrac{N}{2}$$

Mean under Change $H_{A(3)}$:

$$\mu_t = \begin{pmatrix} 4.54 \\ -2.82 \\ -3.03 \end{pmatrix}, \quad t \leq \tfrac{N}{2}; \quad \mu_t = \begin{pmatrix} 4.2 \\ -3.0 \\ -3.2 \end{pmatrix}, \quad \tfrac{N}{2} < t \leq \tfrac{3N}{4}; \quad \mu_t = \begin{pmatrix} 4.2 \\ -3.1 \\ -3.0 \end{pmatrix}, \quad \tfrac{3N}{4} < t \leq N$$

Under the framework of DNS model, functional coefficients $B_{t,k}$ are generated following AR(1) process:

$$B_{t,k} = \mu_k(1-\phi_k) + \phi_k B_{t-1,k} + u_{t,k}, \quad t = 1,\ldots,N, \quad k = 1,2,3,$$

and the error curve $\varepsilon_t(i)$ is simulated from

$$\varepsilon_t(i) = \frac{2}{25}\zeta_{i1} + \frac{1}{25}\zeta_{t2} sin(2\pi i), \quad i \in [0,1],$$

where, $\zeta_{t,k} = 0.9\zeta_{t-1,m} + Z_{t,m}$ and $Z_{t,m} \sim N(0,1)$, m = 1,2, t = 1, ..., N, AR(1) parameters are fixed at: $\phi_1 = 0.9$, $\phi_2 = 0.9$, $\phi_3 = 0.9$.

Once the simulated functional coefficient $B_{t,k}$ is obtained, functional curve observation is constructed by multiplying it with the DNS factors pre-determined before. Therefore, vector of projection z_t in $\alpha_N(x)$ is obtained and related CUSUM test is formed. In order to approximate the right-hand side of the equation (3.3.10), one supreme value is computed given 10000 sampling random variables from the standard normal distribution. Following the same procedure, repeating this 1000 times to obtain its distribution.

Heterogeneous information is also taken into account and represented by the change of error curve variance at certain time point t, denoted as Break Point (BP). By doing this, the intuition is to allow functional curve observation dynamics containing information outside system that may be responded to the real change or may simply data process variation. In this simulation, BP is chosen in the functional error curve variance at either the point which is exactly the same as the real functional mean change (BP = $\frac{N}{2}$) or the one which is not (BP $\neq \frac{N}{2}$).

It is worth mentioning that break point (BP) is the consideration on variance change while the change point (CP) is consideration on mean change. In the simulation, we insert the BP into data generation process by allowing the error structure variance to change at a certain time. However, in real data testing procedure, BP is assumed to be included in its error process (variance becomes a new value after certain time point), therefore no need to specify it.

Simulated AR(1) error heterogeneous variance:

$$Var[u_{t,1}] = 0.003, \quad t \leq t_1 \text{ and } Var[u_{t,1}] = 0.012, \quad t > t_1,$$

$$Var[u_{t,2}] = 0.006, \quad t \leq t_1 \text{ and } Var[u_{t,2}] = 0.026, \quad t > t_1,$$

$$Var[u_{t,3}] = 0.063, \quad t \leq t_1 \text{ and } Var[u_{t,3}] = 0.095, \quad t > t_1$$

Break points are set to be equal to $N/2$, $2N/3$ and 1, corresponding to scenarios with respect to real change points (CP): BP = CP, $BP \neq CP$ and BP at last observation of sample (no consideration on the heterogeneous information effect). As for the simulation sample size, 250 and 500 are used to test all scenarios respectively. DNS projected method simulation power test results for sample size equal to 250 and 500 is reported in table 3.1.

From table 3.1, whether break point is included (BP = 1, standing for no break point in testing sample) does make a significant difference on the projection method testing power. For all test

Table 3.1: Simulation Size and Power for DNS Projection Method

				SIZE	POWER	POWER	POWER
Break Point	**Significance Level**	**Sample Size**	**Change Point**	H_0	H_1	H_2	H_3
			Panel A: Sample Size = 250				
0.5	0.99	250	0.5	0.072	0.634	0.979	0.797
0.667	0.99	250	0.5	0.1	0.426	0.505	0.657
1	0.99	250	0.5	0.016	0.096	0.012	0.06
0.5	0.95	250	0.5	0.118	0.728	0.987	0.866
0.667	0.95	250	0.5	0.135	0.56	0.637	0.775
1	0.95	250	0.5	0.046	0.285	0.074	0.18
0.5	0.90	250	0.5	0.147	0.772	0.992	0.897
0.667	0.90	250	0.5	0.164	0.619	0.719	0.815
1	0.90	250	0.5	0.074	0.415	0.142	0.291
			Panel B: Sample Size = 500				
0.5	0.99	500	0.5	0.056	0.895	1	0.98
0.667	0.99	500	0.5	0.065	0.809	0.934	0.94
1	0.99	500	0.5	0.029	0.764	0.367	0.673
0.5	0.95	500	0.5	0.112	0.945	1	0.99
0.667	0.95	500	0.5	0.114	0.882	0.978	0.964
1	0.95	500	0.5	0.075	0.931	0.738	0.903
0.5	0.90	500	0.5	0.154	0.955	1	0.992
0.667	0.90	500	0.5	0.137	0.912	0.988	0.977
1	0.90	500	0.5	0.106	0.967	0.879	0.958

Note: this table reports the simulation test power results based on Kolmogorov-Smirnov Functional projection method with Dynamic Nelson-Siegel model factors as projected factors Sample. All scenarios are reported for all three significance levels (99%,95% and 90%) under one null hypothesis (H_0) and three alternative hypothesis (H_1,H_2 and H_3) with details specified in the simulation section. In panel A, break points are settled as 0.5 (1/2 of sample size) , 0.667 (2/3 of sample size) and 1 (break is at the last observation of sample, implying no variance change in data generation simulation process) given the sample size is 250. In panel B, break points are settled as 0.5 (1/2 of sample size) , 0.667 (2/3 of sample size) and 1 (no break point in test sample) given the sample size is 500.

scenarios with sample size 500, as long as break point is introduced, simulation testing power after thousands trail shows reasonable results with acceptable errors. Compared with the result from Bardsley et al. (2017) who use Cramer-von-Mises functional statistics, Kolmogorov-Smirnov based test has relatively upward testing powers under all scenarios. Similar to their findings, there is no consistent evidence for testing power in this simulation in terms of the different alternative hypothesises. Specifically, testing power under H_2 alternative is higher than the one under H_1 given the change size

Table 3.2: Simulation Size and Power for Full Functional Projection Method

				SIZE	POWER	POWER	POWER
Break Point	**Significance Level**	**Sample Size**	**Change Point**	H_0	H_1	H_2	H_3
			Panel A: Sample Size = 250				
0.5	0.99	250	0.5	0.08	0.63	0.988	0.814
0.667	0.99	250	0.5	0.087	0.366	0.353	0.657
1	0.99	250	0.5	0.007	0.028	0	0.004
0.5	0.95	250	0.5	0.121	0.726	0.995	0.873
0.667	0.95	250	0.5	0.129	0.488	0.484	0.759
1	0.95	250	0.5	0.033	0.115	0.003	0.018
0.5	0.90	250	0.5	0.157	0.772	0.997	0.902
0.667	0.90	250	0.5	0.164	0.544	0.56	0.804
1	0.90	250	0.5	0.058	0.201	0.01	0.039
			Panel B: Sample Size = 500				
0.5	0.99	500	0.5	0.056	0.887	1	0.981
0.667	0.99	500	0.5	0.073	0.714	0.685	0.935
1	0.99	500	0.5	0.027	0.406	0.005	0.083
0.5	0.95	500	0.5	0.11	0.93	1	0.995
0.667	0.95	500	0.5	0.13	0.825	0.837	0.973
1	0.95	500	0.5	0.068	0.76	0.067	0.337
0.5	0.90	500	0.5	0.154	0.945	1	0.996
0.667	0.90	500	0.5	0.164	0.86	0.894	0.977
1	0.90	500	0.5	0.108	0.875	0.178	0.517

Note: this table reports the simulation test power results based on Kolmogorov-Smirnov Functional projection method with full functional factors as projected factors Sample. All scenarios are reported for three significance levels (99%,95% and 90%) under one null hypothesis (H_0) and three alternative hypothesis (H_1,H_2 and H_3) with details specified in the simulation section. In panel A, break points are settled as 0.5 (1/2 of sample size), 0.667 (2/3 of sample size) and 1 (no break point in testing sample) for sample size equal to 250. In panel B, break points are settled as 0.5 (1/2 of sample size), 0.667 (2/3 of sample size) and 1 (no break point in testing sample) for sample size equal to 500.

departure from H_0 is larger for H_2 case. Sample size 250 does generally underperform in all scenarios compared with sample size 500.

In order to control the DNS factors selection bias, fully functional method, projecting functional curve observations on orthogonal basis curve (e.g. Fourier series), is conducted with the same settings under all scenarios. Results for simulation power test can be found in table 3.2 for sample size 250 and 500 respectively.

From table 3.2, fully functional factors projected method has slightly lower testing power for most scenarios compared with the Dynamic Nelson-Siegel projected factors tests. Similar to table 3.1, in the absence of break points setting, functional detection power has been distorted. Sample size under 500 does also perform stable than sample size under 250, consistent with table 3.1 outcome.

To explore the statistics detection power in terms of different change point size, sensitivity on size of change is tested based on size range $[0,1]$ with steps 0.02 under DNS model framework.

Mean under Change H_A:

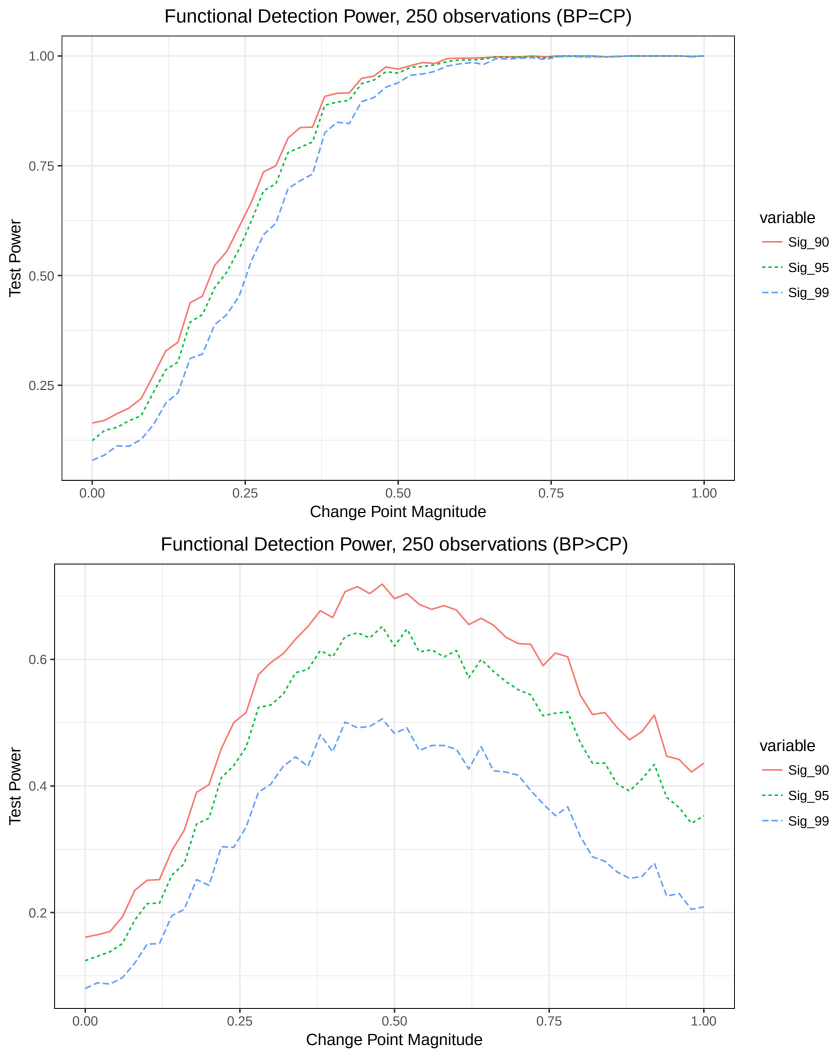
$$\mu_i = \begin{pmatrix} 4.54 \\ -2.82 \\ -3.03 \end{pmatrix}, \quad i \leq \frac{N}{2}; \quad \mu_i = \begin{pmatrix} 4.54 + (0.02r) \\ -2.82 + (0.02r) \\ -3.03 + (0.02r) \end{pmatrix}, \quad i > \frac{N}{2}$$

where, r is the index to control the size of change ($r = 0, 1, 2, \ldots, 50$).

Simulations are based on the middle real change point ($N/2$), sample size 250 and 500, break point ($N/2$ and $3N/4$). Specifically, simulation is implemented with adding new vector values on the functional mean, starting from [0,0,0] up to [1,1,1] with an increment vector [0.02,0.02,0.02]. It is worth mentioning that under the initial case, the change size equal to 0 is the same as testing rejection error under the null hypothesis. Results are presented in plot with detection power against the size of change for both 250 and 500 sample sizes and different significance levels.

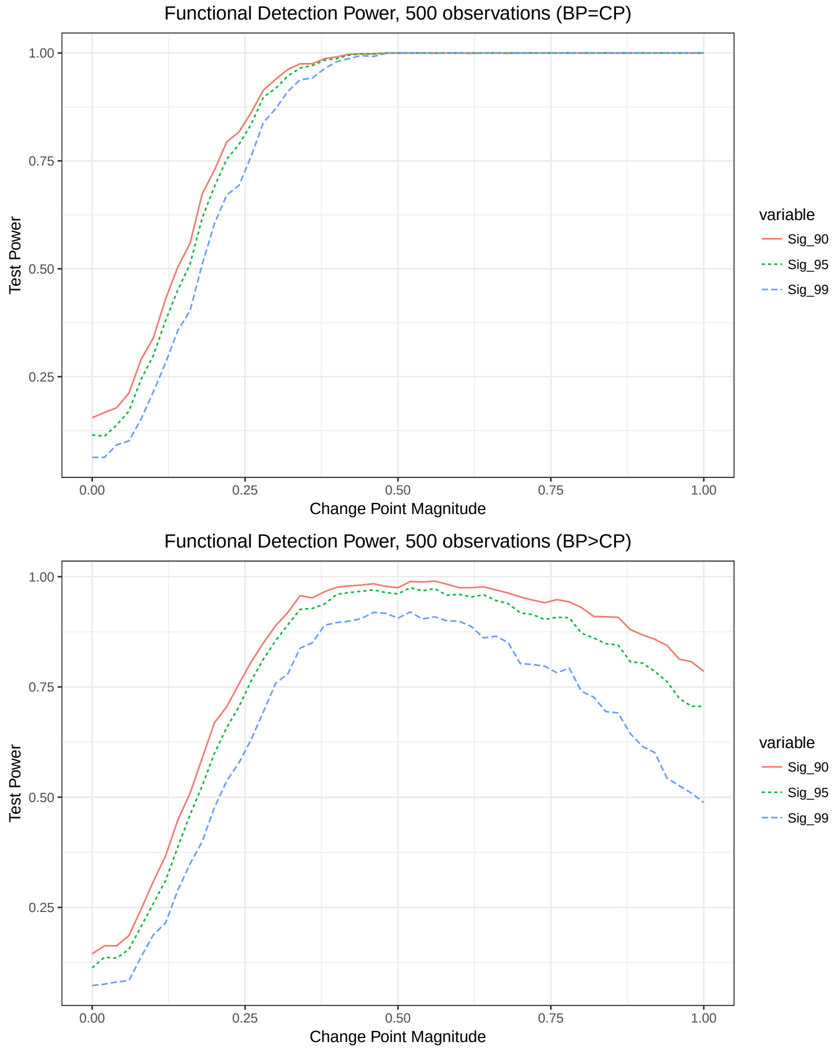
Change point magnitude sensitivity analysis is conducted with the sample size 250 and 500 in figure 3.2 and 3.3 respectively. Given x-axis standing for change point size, figure 3.2 and 3.3 show change point test power on y-axis for three significance level (90%, 95% and 99%) under two scenarios: BP = CP and BP $\neq$ CP. Similar conclusions echoing the previous part, location of break point does not alter the testing power significantly as long as the break point has been settled in the simulated data generating process. Moreover, monotonic momentum on testing power with respect to change magnitude is confirmed under case of BP = CP only.

Figure 3.2: Sensitivity of Testing Power on Change Point Magnitude with Sample Size 250



Note: this figure shows sensitivity of functional testing power (Y-axis) with respect to change point magnitude (X-axis). Y-axis is the rejection rate ranging from 0 to 1 and X-axis is change point magnitude ranging from 0 to 1 with step 0.2. Simulation sample size is 250 with top panel plot under scenario break point equal to change point (BP = CP) and bottom panel plot under scenario break point is not equal to change point (BP $\neq$ CP). Red solid, green dot and blue dash lines represent testing power value under significance level 90%, 95% and 99% respectively.

Figure 3.3: Sensitivity of Testing Power on Change Point Magnitude with Sample Size 500



Note: this figure shows sensitivity of functional testing power (Y-axis) with respect to change point magnitude (X-axis). Y-axis is the rejection rate ranging from 0 to 1 and X-axis is change point magnitude ranging from 0 to 1 with step 0.2. Simulation sample size is 500 with top panel plot under scenario break point equal to change point (BP = CP) and bottom panel plot under scenario break point is not equal to change point (BP $\neq$ CP). Red solid, green dot and blue dash lines represent testing power value under significance level 90%, 95% and 99% respectively.

By comparison, sample size does make a strong difference regardless of change point magnitude on size interval. Roughly speaking, sample size 500 does give a much better performance in terms of the rejection rate on all change size cases. Convergence speed is relatively faster in the large sample size 500. In both case when break point is consistent with change point, testing power will converge to probability 1 as long as the change size is relatively large enough.

3.5 Empirical Finite Sample Analysis

Real time data application based on Kolmogorov-Smirnov functional statistics is conducted. The purpose is to (1) provide the real life financial market application on this new statistic (2) conduct post-change analysis on subsample obtained from whole sample partition via change point location. Once the change point is documented, empirical sample data is separated according to change points location. Then further regression analysis is run for the purpose of explaining underlying reasons behind this change. Binary segmentation method is implemented until no changes detected since method in this chapter allows multiple finite changes in the data generating process. Specifically, whole testing sample is divided by changes location and continue the same detection procedure for divided samples until no rejection is recorded.

The initial attempt is via the Dynamic Nelson-Siegel (DNS) model in which *"Level"*, *"Slope"* and *"Curvature"* factors will be used to project infinite dimensional functional data onto finite space. Furthermore, for change point detection robustness check, fully functional method is applied to avoiding the DNS model dependent issue (bias) caused by model misspecification problem (e.g. change point possibilities embedded in the lambda value).

Driving forces behind the change point detected on projected functional observation is normally not easy. However, given the advantages of the DNS model, research interest can be well transferred on analysing the latent factors dynamics for simplicity and clear interpretation view. By analysing factors especially on the *"Slope"* and *"Curvature"* latent factors, regime switching (market expectation shift) can be statistically identified, matching backwardation and contango theory in commodity futures literature (see discussions from Gorton et al. (2007), Gorton and Rouwenhorst (2004) and

Fernandez-Perez et al. (2017*b*)). In this functional setting, structure break point on the term structure identification is more solid compared with similar studies on the single time series analysis, often on either spot market data or front future contract data. Formally speaking, functional test considers term structure exposure across all maturities which is superior to the single maturity series test.

3.5.1 Data Description

Commodity futures market data are selected as the testing sample with specified products: metal product Gold from the Commodity Mercantile Exchange (COMEX) and energy product Light Crude Oil from the New York Mercantile Exchange (NYMEX). Considerations on these two commodity futures market data structure selection in the functional change point test are listed in following reasons: (1) consistent data structure (on each observed point, contracts prices are spanning across an increasing ordered maturities' interval without missing points), (2) literature supported structure data good fitting from DNS (GrØnborg and Lunde, 2016, Baruník and Malinska, 2016 and Karstanje et al., 2017), (3) futures market specification research interests (detecting changes on then DNS model in this market can provide both statistical argument on the current futures term structure modelling imperfection (inclusion of regime and error correction in DNS model (Nomikos and Pouliasis, 2015) and adaptive change detection in DNS modelling (Chen and Niu, 2014)) and reflect market change on demand-supply relation as well as future expectation (Karstanje et al., 2017)), (4) these two products have the best term structure in terms of numbers of maturities and time dimension[34] (5) gold and light crude oil are closely related to financial crisis change but reacts differently (e.g. in financial crisis 2008, gold gains popularity as markets' risk level goes up and investors would prefer less-risky asset, while light crude oil priced in USD and linked to fundamental industry will react more obvious than gold somehow, other products, for example, cotton does not vary too much as driving forces behind

[34] Other products from data source have discrete maturity interval varying across years

this category are different).

Data is from DataStream with time spanning from 04/05/2007 to 31/12/2009 in weekly frequency, 139 observations. Futures contract has pre-determined expiration date which details the last trading date for physical products' transaction. Consistent with the standard literature, contract rolling is first applied and the linear interpolation is then deployed for constant time-to-maturity calculation (Diebold and Li, 2006). Commodity futures price term structure is organized as a matrix with columns standing for time-to-maturity and rows standing for continuous time dimension.

In this section, functional change point detection procedure is implemented with number of maturity contract equal to 18 (months) and 11 (months) separately. The reason for short time-to-maturity inclusion is aimed at controlling the illiquid effect caused by longer maturity contracts as they are less traded in reality (Heidorn et al., 2015). The empirical experiments are consistent across both gold and light crude oil products data. In conclusion, generally, testing procedure is applied to both matrices with 18 and 11 columns respectively. The maximum number of column is limited by the data itself (there is no extrapolation to manipulate the data structure in this case).

Compared with simulation test, empirical analysis is somehow referred as a finite sample test. Small sample size testing is selected to avoid mainly due to change detection property under the alternative when sample size goes to infinity. That is, statistics under large sample size scenario will suggest change point occurrence with probability equal to one.

For regression analysis, inspired by large scale database re-factoring method (principal component analysis) from Stock and Watson (2012) and closely related studies on commodity futures market by Karstanje et al. (2017), following data are collected (1) interest rate (Federal Funds, 3-month treasure bill and 6-month treasury bill), exchange rate (traded weighted U.S. dollar index, major currency, index) and TED spread (spread between 3-month treasury bill and 3-month interbank Libor rate) are download from FRED St. Louis database, (2) Equity data (Dow Jones Industry Index and S&P 500 Index), BDI (Baltic Dry Index) and CRBSPOT (Commodity Research Bureau spot market price index) from DataStream (3) ADS (Aruoba Diebold Scotti financial conditions index) is collected from Federal Reserve Bank of Philadelphia.

To explore the contribution or deriving force from trading specific behaviour, both short and long open interest for different trader types (*Managed Money*, *Swap Dealer*, *Producers*, *Hedgers* and *Speculators*) are collected from Commodity Futures Trading Commission following studies in the literature (Büyükşahin and Harris, 2011, Irwin and Sanders, 2012 and Heidorn et al., 2015). For measurement calculation of different types of traders, both long position effect and net long position effect are considered in this chapter for comprehensive comparison.

3.5.2 Dynamic Nelson-Siegel model Estimation

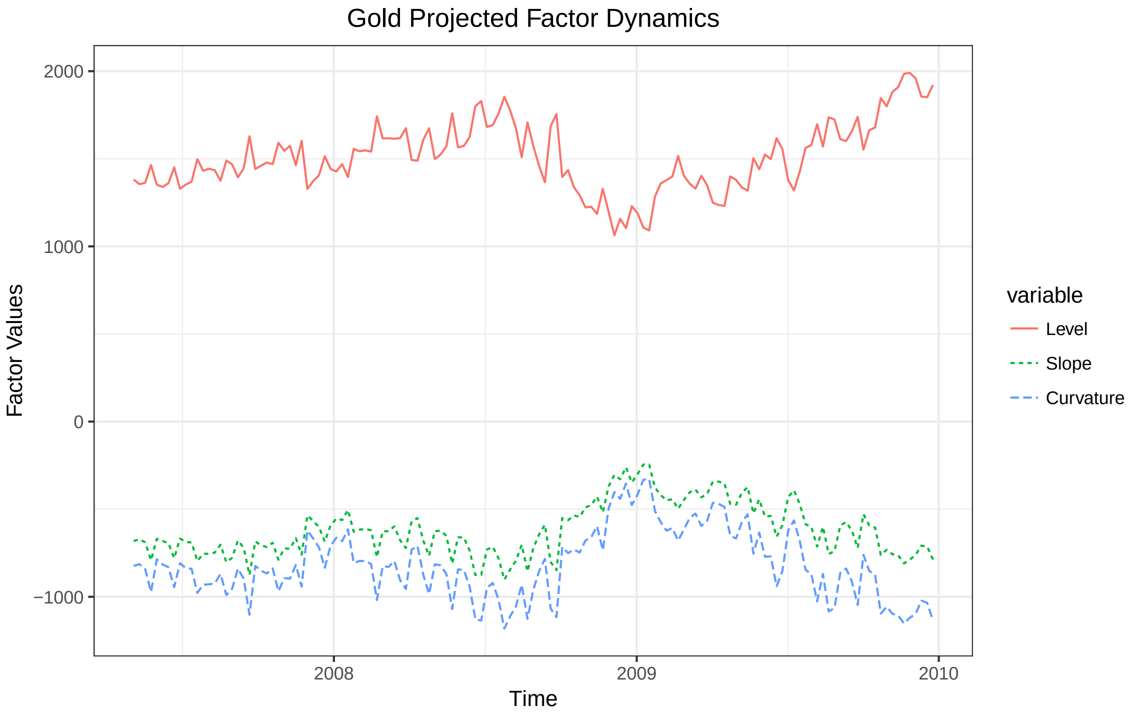
Following the literature of estimating latent factors in the DNS model, fixing lambda is a pre-requisite. The two-step process is implemented by fixing lambda first and then doing cross-sectional regression for term structure data on each week observation (Diebold and Li, 2006). Grid search optimization (minimization of sum of squared errors under cross-sectional fitting) with interval range for lambda value (0,1] and step 0.001 is implemented practically. The optimal lambda value selection criterion can be represented as the following logical:

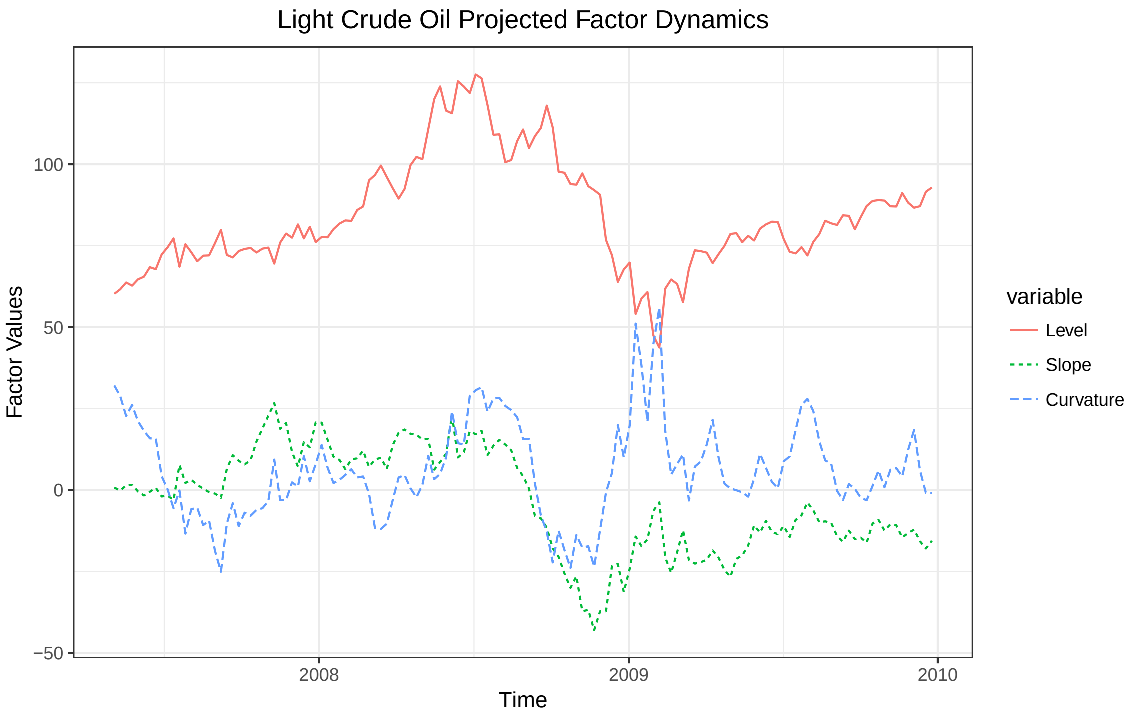
$$\lambda^* = \inf\left\{\lambda_k : min\left[\sum_{t=1}^{N}\sum_{k=1}^{K}\varepsilon_t(\lambda_k)^T\varepsilon_t(\lambda_k)\right]\right\}, \quad \lambda_k = 0.001, 0.002, 0.003, \ldots, 1, \quad k = 1, 2, 3, \ldots, K = 1000$$

where, N is the sample length, ε is the cross-sectional estimation error. With the optimal lambda value, cross-sectional regression will automatically yield the estimated coefficients for latent factors.

Figure 3.4 shows the estimation of latent factors dynamics across time dimension with optimal

Figure 3.4: Projected Factor Dynamics for Assets Cross Financial Crisis Period





Note: this figure reports the Dynamic Nelson-Siegel model fitting results on weekly price term structure of crude oil, Gold and Light crude oil from 04/05/2007 to 31/12/2009 with daily frequency data (T = 1, 2, . . . , 139). Lambda value is first optimized within sample data and then regression method is applied to estimate three factors: ”Level”, ”Slope” and ”Curvature”.

lambda value 0.1 for both gold and light crude oil. Factors estimation is conducted without scaling, therefore *"Level"* factor (red solid line) represents the average price level across all time-to-maturity. It is also obvious to see that this time-to-maturity averaged effect has a big drop responded to the financial crisis in 2008, from around 1700 to nearly 1000 for gold and from 125 to below 50 for light crude oil. *"Slope"* and *"Curvature"* factors also document this change with an opposite movement.

It is worth mentioning that light crude oil market generally shows more fluctuation within full sample compared with gold. This can be evidenced from (Kesicki, 2010 and Singleton, 2013) who identify that oil market shift from backwardation to contango after 16/05/2008. On the contrary, in the whole sample period, gold market is always on backwardation, witnessed by the negative slope factors across financial crisis period. Given the increasing risk fact, a safer invest asset is expected and gold in somehow is a good candidate, which then push up the short-term contract price. This is also consistent with the findings by Andreasson et al., 2016 who document that gold price jumps without experiencing trough between 2007 - 2009.

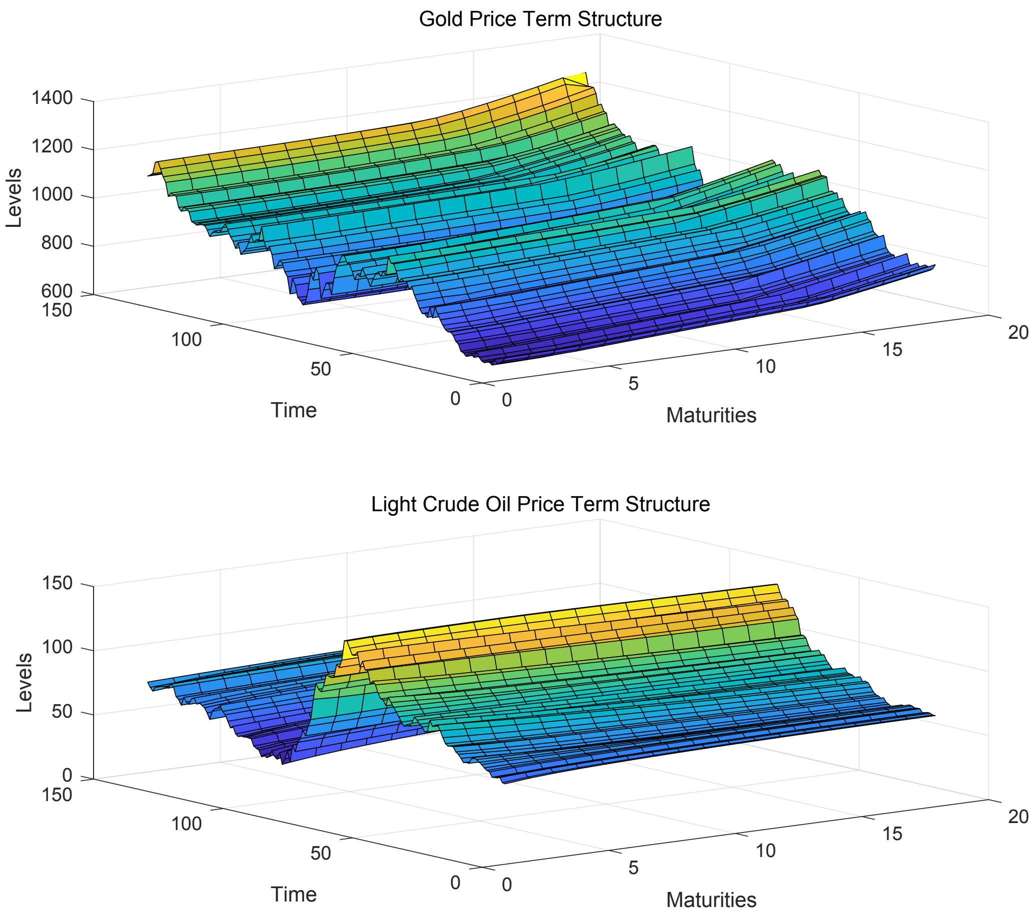
3.5.3 Empirical Functional Change Point Detection

In this part, empirical functional change detection is completed by testing selected commodity futures market data during the recent financial crisis period. Summary statistics of commodity futures price term structure in terms of different time-to-maturity are reported for both crude oil and gold in table 3.3 and 3.4 respectively.

The sample size is fixed for 139 trading weeks (last Friday daily observation) for two assets. Averaged contango effect can be observed across tables for two products. The longer the time-to-maturity, the higher the price level, which shows an upward sloping curve. Volatilities with respect to time-to-maturity across two assets show a decreasing trend, which is referred to Balassa-Samuelson effect in the literature (Samuelson, 1965). This is mainly because the shot-maturity contracts are more actively traded compared with the long-maturity ones. Therefore, it is more obvious to observe that the short-maturity contracts' price variance is larger as this reflect the trading open interests and volumes contributed from market participators. As for long-maturity contracts, lack of liquidity (less traded) in another way makes price stable.

Accompanying with the summary statistics, dynamics of futures price term structure is presented via three-dimensional surface plots in figure 3.5. Different from the averaged effect, light crude oil structure shows a clear shift from backwardation to contango spanning financial crisis period while gold structure presents a change on slope from this figure.

Figure 3.5: Price Term Structure 3-Dimensional Surface Plot



Note: this figure shows dynamics of price term structure for two different assets. Top left panel is for Gold and bottom panel is for Light crude oil. X-axis is time-to-maturity starting from 1 to 18 standing for (1 month and 18-month maturity contract). Y-axis is the time dimension weekly data starting T = 0 to T = 139 (04/05/2007 to 31/12/2009)

Table 3.3: Summary Statistics for Gold Price Term Structure

	N	Mean	SD	Median	Min	Max	Skew	Kurtosis
Maturity.1	139	871.188	123.288	895.400	645.500	1174.200	-0.021	-0.371
Maturity.2	139	872.581	122.811	896.500	647.500	1175.500	-0.018	-0.365
Maturity.3	139	874.657	122.144	897.300	650.300	1176.800	-0.014	-0.358
Maturity.4	139	877.632	121.045	899.000	656.400	1177.900	-0.012	-0.352
Maturity.5	139	881.047	119.737	901.100	662.500	1179.100	-0.007	-0.347
Maturity.6	139	884.422	118.509	904.500	668.500	1180.300	-0.001	-0.342
Maturity.7	139	887.831	117.393	908.900	674.500	1182.000	0.007	-0.336
Maturity.8	139	891.356	116.412	913.700	680.700	1184.300	0.017	-0.329
Maturity.9	139	895.037	115.553	918.800	686.800	1186.800	0.027	-0.323
Maturity.10	139	898.904	114.814	922.000	693.000	1189.600	0.038	-0.318
Maturity.11	139	902.927	114.205	924.600	699.300	1192.900	0.049	-0.315
Maturity.12	139	907.196	113.876	929.200	705.600	1200.900	0.070	-0.292
Maturity.13	139	913.024	113.948	928.700	711.700	1215.200	0.101	-0.256
Maturity.14	139	924.340	114.704	938.700	717.800	1232.700	0.144	-0.222
Maturity.15	139	940.069	114.911	955.800	736.800	1252.500	0.186	-0.199
Maturity.16	139	957.006	115.654	972.900	755.800	1273.700	0.228	-0.178
Maturity.17	139	974.891	116.836	988.100	775.200	1296.600	0.269	-0.160
Maturity.18	139	992.737	116.126	1002.600	794.900	1302.500	0.208	-0.382

Note: the table reports summary statistics of daily commodity future price data for different time-to-maturity from 01/01/2007 to 31/12/2009. The table first row is organized as the label for each column meaning: N (number of observations), Mean (mean value), SD (standard deviation), Median (median of price level), Max (maximum price value), Min (minimum price value), Skew (skewness of price) and Kurtosis (kurtosis of price).

Given the optimal lambda and corresponding DNS three factors, projected vector is easier to be obtained once functional observation is projected onto *"Level"*, *"Slope"* and *"Curvature"*. Functional change detection is then experimented on testing the mean change of projected vectors.

This whole procedure is repeated for both gold and light crude oil estimated projected factors with price term structure maturities equalling 18 and 11 months. In the fully functional change detection process, factors are selected from orthonormal basis functions (Fourier basis in this chapter) and implemented for gold and light crude oil with the same maturity level as well. Functional empirical change detection results are shown in table 3.5.

Table 3.4: Summary Statistics for Light Crude Oil Price Term Structure

	N	Mean	SD	Median	Min	Max	Skew	Kurtosis
Maturity.1	139	80.690	25.806	75.470	37.710	145.290	0.561	-0.337
Maturity.2	139	81.315	25.037	75.370	40.530	145.860	0.660	-0.222
Maturity.3	139	81.734	24.500	75.260	42.280	146.120	0.724	-0.122
Maturity.4	139	82.051	24.078	75.060	43.750	146.310	0.774	-0.036
Maturity.5	139	82.322	23.719	75.470	45.080	146.500	0.816	0.040
Maturity.6	139	82.565	23.395	75.950	46.330	146.680	0.852	0.110
Maturity.7	139	82.774	23.097	76.450	47.340	146.790	0.884	0.174
Maturity.8	139	82.961	22.810	76.910	48.120	146.810	0.914	0.235
Maturity.9	139	83.129	22.526	76.950	48.900	146.680	0.941	0.290
Maturity.10	139	83.286	22.253	77.150	49.620	146.530	0.966	0.340
Maturity.11	139	83.434	21.990	77.090	50.330	146.340	0.990	0.386
Maturity.12	139	83.573	21.740	77.420	51.020	146.100	1.012	0.428
Maturity.13	139	83.698	21.504	77.750	51.670	145.870	1.034	0.469
Maturity.14	139	83.815	21.283	77.910	52.280	145.640	1.054	0.508
Maturity.15	139	83.925	21.076	78.160	52.860	145.420	1.074	0.545
Maturity.16	139	84.030	20.882	78.490	53.390	145.200	1.093	0.579
Maturity.17	139	84.127	20.700	78.580	53.920	144.980	1.110	0.611
Maturity.18	139	84.223	20.526	78.750	54.450	144.750	1.126	0.637

Note: the table reports summary statistics of daily commodity future price data for different time-to-maturity from 01/01/2007 to 31/12/2009. The table first row is organized as the label for each column meaning: N (number of observations), Mean (mean value), SD (standard deviation), Median (median of price level), Max (maximum price value), Min (minimum price value), Skew (skewness of price) and Kurtosis (kurtosis of price).

Testing procedure via the DNS model factors indicates significant results on both rejection significance level and change point location. Robustness check via fully functional factors confirms the validity of testing results from the DNS model factors. Overall, consistency results are documented regardless of methods used, suggesting the existence of the real change points. It is clear to see that change point location for oil market (10/10/2008) is 3 months earlier than gold market (23/01/2009).

Table 3.5: Empirical Functional Change Point Detection Results

Breakpoint	Critical Value_90	Critical Value_95	Critical Value_99	Statistics	Location
Panel A: DNS Projected Factors					
			Gold Maturity 18		
0.5	27.849	29.551	33.234	37.942***	2009/01/23
			Gold Maturity 11		
0.5	27.146	28.782	32.464	41.366***	2009/01/23
			Light Crude Oil Maturity 18		
0.5	5.357	5.719	6.385	7.664***	2008/10/10
			Light Crude Oil Maturity 11		
0.5	5.547	5.886	6.564	9.139***	2008/10/10
Panel B: Fully Functional Factors					
			Gold Maturity 18		
0.5	27.790	29.475	32.546	37.787***	2009/01/23
			Gold Maturity 11		
0.5	27.065	28.791	32.209	41.199***	2009/01/23
			Light Crude Oil Maturity 18		
0.5	5.365	5.707	6.347	7.671***	2008/10/10
			Light Crude Oil Maturity 11		
0.5	5.580	5.915	6.647	9.146***	2008/10/10

$^{***}p < 0.01$, $^{*}*p < 0.05$, $^{*}p < 0.1$

Note: the table reports functional change detection results via both Dynamic Nelson-Siegel model projected factors (Panel A) and Fully Functional Factors (Panel B) on both gold and light crude oil market with weekly frequency data from 04/05/2007 to 31/12/2009. The first row in table is labelled as: Breakpoint (break point setting statistics calculation, setting for this is fixed at 0.5), Critical Value_90, Critical Value_95, Critical Value_99 (empirical critical value calculated for significance level 90%, 95% and 99%), Statistics (Kolmogorov-Smirnov functional statistics) and Location (sample location where maximum of functional statistics is reached). For each panel, detection results are listed for two assets (Gold and Light Crude Oil) with consideration on number of maturity selected in functional detection procedure (11 and 18 contracts with monthly time-to-maturity).

3.5.4 Empirical Regression Analysis

Based on the findings (change point location) above, change point implied economic situation change is further investigated in this section. Although it is possible to do functional regression test, employing scalar version is easier to interpret. Therefore, in the practical regression analysis, time-series latent factors[35] that represent the term structure dynamics exposure on *"Level"*, *"Slope"* and *"Curvature"* factors are used in this analysis as dependent variables. For each asset, latent factors samples are separated into sample before change and sample after change given the change points' locations from the above section. Latent factors are then regressed on selected explanatory information set for both subsamples and full-sample based on weekly observations. Since idea here is to explore the underlying driving force and sign contribution, regression coefficients are not scaled in this part.

The "Level" factor is transferred to log difference innovations, denoted as $\Delta Level$[36], in the regression analysis. Positive (negative) contribution from this explanatory variable can be explained as increasing (decreasing) shift value as well as volatility. For the *"Slope"* factor, backwardation (contango) is recorded when regression coefficient is positive (negative). Positive (negative) estimated coefficients given the *"Curvature"* factor contribute to increase (decrease) of middle term contract price movement.

In the interest of anchoring the driving force behind the DNS modelling, regression analysis is conducted under the framework of multivariate forecasting approach. Generally, three latent factors are assumed to be linearly forecasted by market information from equity, interest rate, foreign exchange market, market financial conditions and volatility.

Moreover, to explore how market participators' trading behaviours contribute to latent factors

[35] see figure 3.4 for their time-series dynamics

[36] Augmented DickeyFuller test suggests that unit root exists in "Level" projected factor, therefore, first order difference of "Level" projected factors and outcome of this is regarded as factor innovation

future movement, $Trade$ is the proxy variable for market participation ratio change for specific type behaviour (open interest data from the Commodity Futures Trading Commission, CFTC).

$$Trade^{long}_{i,j,t-1} = \frac{\#positions_{j,i,t-1}}{\sum_{j=1}^{5} \#positions_{j,i,t-1}}$$

$$Trade^{net\_long}_{i,j,t-1} = \frac{\#longpositions_{j,i,t-1} - \#shortpositions_{j,i,t-1}}{\#longpositions_{j,i,t-1} + \#shortpositions_{j,i,t-1}}$$

where, $Trade^{long}_{i,j,t-1}$ is an set of explanatory variables to explore long only trading position taken by trading categories (j represented by either *Managed Money*, *Swap Dealer*, *Producers*, *Hedgers* and *Speculators* open interest in corresponding asset) data collected from the CFTC for asset i at time $t-1$. $Trade^{net\_long}_{i,j,t-1}$ is for net long position calculation (long position minus short position).

$$\begin{aligned} Factor_{i,t} = \alpha_i + \beta_{1,i}Equity_{t-1} + \beta_{2,i}FinancialIndex_{t-1} + \beta_{3,i}CRBSPOT_{t-1} + \beta_{4,i}IR_t \\ + \beta_{5,i}TED_{t-1} + \beta_{5,i}EX_{t-1} + \beta_{5,i}Trade_{i,j,t-1} + \varepsilon_{i,t} \end{aligned} \tag{3.5.1}$$

where $Factor_{i,t}$ is the projected factor with index i = 1 (*"ΔLevel"*), 2 (*"Slope"*) and 3 (*"Curvature"*) and t is time dimension, β is the factor regression coefficients with index i = 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, $Equity_{t-1}$ is the PCA transformed proxy variable for equity market in terms of the Dow Jones Industry Index and the S&P 500 Index at time $t-1$, $FinancialIndex_{t-1}$ is the PCA transformed proxy variable for financial conditions in terms of Aruboa Diebold Scotti index and Dry bulk shipping index at time $t-1$, $CRBSPOT_{t-1}$ is the volatility of commodity Research Bureau spot market price index at time $t-1$, IR_{t-1} is the PCA transformed main component in terms of effective fund rate, 3-month secondary market T-bill and 6-month secondary market T-bill at time $t-1$, TED_{t-1} is the differential between 3-month inter-bank rate and 3-month Libor rate at time $t-1$, EX_{t-1} is Traded Weighted U.S Dollar Index for Major currencies index at time $t-1$, $Trade_{i,j,t-1}$ is universe version, delegating both *long* and *net_long* version above.

Table 3.6: Pairwise Correlation Matrix for Gold CFTC Participators Position

	Hedgers.L	Speculators.L	Producers.L	ManagedMoney.L	SwapDealer.L	Hedgers.N	Speculators.N	Producers.N	ManagedMoney.N	SwapDealer.N
Hedgers.L	1.000	0.000	0.000	0.000	0.000	0.000	0.000	0.000	0.000	0.000
Speculators.L	**-0.496**	1.000	0.000	0.000	0.000	0.000	0.000	0.000	0.000	0.000
Producers.L	-0.136	**0.658**	1.000	0.000	0.000	0.000	0.000	0.000	0.000	0.000
ManagedMoney.L	**-0.673**	**0.935**	**0.636**	1.000	0.000	0.000	0.000	0.000	0.000	0.000
SwapDealer.L	**0.733**	**-0.293**	-0.133	**-0.482**	1.000	0.000	0.000	0.000	0.000	0.000
Hedgers.N	**0.718**	**-0.937**	**-0.610**	**-0.977**	**0.473**	1.000	0.000	0.000	0.000	0.000
Speculators.N	**-0.509**	**0.856**	**0.779**	**0.867**	**-0.403**	-0.893	1.000	0.000	0.000	0.000
Producers.N	**0.680**	**-0.886**	**-0.663**	**-0.907**	**0.295**	**0.921**	**-0.815**	1.000	0.000	0.000
ManagedMoney.N	**-0.622**	**0.853**	**0.759**	**0.902**	**-0.498**	**-0.905**	**0.939**	**-0.878**	1.000	0.000
SwapDealer.N	**0.414**	**-0.581**	-0.109	**-0.620**	**0.577**	**0.635**	**-0.543**	**0.305**	**-0.475**	1.000

Note: This table report the pairwise correlation results for all gold market participators' open interest data in both long only and net value measure. The first column and first row are standing for different participators' category in both long only (denoted as L) and net (denoted as N) open interest measurement. Values in bold are at least 95% significant.

Table 3.7: Pairwise Correlation Matrix for Light Crude Oil CFTC Participators Position

	Hedgers.L	Speculators.L	Producers.L	ManagedMoney.L	SwapDealer.L	Hedgers.N	Speculators.N	Producers.N	ManagedMoney.N	SwapDealer.N
Hedgers.L	1.000	0.000	0.000	0.000	0.000	0.000	0.000	0.000	0.000	0.000
Speculators.L	**0.212**	1.000	0.000	0.000	0.000	0.000	0.000	0.000	0.000	0.000
Producers.L	**0.462**	**-0.411**	1.000	0.000	0.000	0.000	0.000	0.000	0.000	0.000
ManagedMoney.L	0.059	**0.834**	**-0.264**	1.000	0.000	0.000	0.000	0.000	0.000	0.000
SwapDealer.L	**0.242**	**0.466**	**-0.666**	**0.263**	1.000	0.000	0.000	0.000	0.000	0.000
Hedgers.N	**0.165**	**-0.376**	-0.104	**-0.490**	**0.206**	1.000	0.000	0.000	0.000	0.000
Speculators.N	-0.025	0.156	**0.455**	**0.283**	**-0.514**	**-0.870**	1.000	0.000	0.000	0.000
Producers.N	0.015	**-0.526**	**0.650**	**-0.321**	**-0.804**	**0.287**	**0.101**	1.000	0.000	0.000
ManagedMoney.N	-0.101	**0.267**	**0.187**	**0.596**	**-0.227**	**-0.782**	**0.708**	**-0.077**	1.000	0.000
SwapDealer.N	**0.190**	0.076	**-0.302**	-0.158	**0.661**	**0.170**	**-0.409**	**-0.728**	**-0.324**	1.000

Note: This table report the pairwise correlation results for all light crude oil market participators' open interest data in both long only and net value measure. The first column and first row are standing for different participators' category in both long only (denoted as L) and net (denoted as N) open interest measurement. Values in bold are at least 95% significant.

Pairwise correlation matrices are reported for both gold and light crude oil market participators' CFTC data. Variable names are listed in either the first column or the first row of these two tables. For either long position only or net position value, it is obvious that high correlation coefficient value (over 0.5 and some of them over 0.8 and 0.9), no matter positive or negative, can be observed and at least 95% significant. Therefore, in the following regression analysis, this chapter does not take into account of the scenario in which all variables listed in table 3.6 and 3.7 are included in explanatory variables for both gold and oil market.

From table 3.8, the first two factors, *"$\Delta Level$"* and *"$Slope$"*, have no exposure to nearly all common explanatory variables except for a little evidence on EX_{t-1}. There is positive significant forecasting relations documented on "Curvature" factor from explanatory variables EX_{t-1} and $Equity_{t-1}$

Table 3.8: Gold Subsample Regression Analysis under Hedging Pressure Effect

	Dependent variable:								
		ΔLevel_t			Slope_t			*Curvature_t*	
	(Before)	(After)	(Full)	(Before)	(After)	(Full)	(Before)	(After)	(Full)
	Panel B: CFTC Long Position								
Equity_t-1	537.809	−745.840	−342.504	−226.338	737.087	485.253	−220.505	1,141.757*	785.992
	(849.241)	(533.033)	(470.151)	(719.845)	(444.483)	(387.559)	(959.422)	(634.113)	(530.875)
FinancialIndex_t-1	391.919	333.830	248.664	−55.681	−144.688	−40.635	−75.169	−193.967	−37.768
	(657.197)	(497.256)	(403.232)	(557.063)	(414.649)	(332.396)	(742.463)	(591.551)	(455.313)
IR_t-1	−20.957	261.239	52.243	9.110	−182.525	−47.543	16.553	−260.360	−65.060
	(103.011)	(247.852)	(82.042)	(87.315)	(206.678)	(67.630)	(116.375)	(294.853)	(92.639)
TEDRATE_t-1	11.399	77.693	33.837	−20.001	−59.480	−37.387	−30.139	−83.844	−51.858
	(51.365)	(77.762)	(36.476)	(43.539)	(64.844)	(30.068)	(58.029)	(92.508)	(41.187)
EX_t-1	154.768	−703.115	111.653	86.253	736.332	66.049	48.642	1,123.227*	58.989
	(273.959)	(547.614)	(157.763)	(232.217)	(456.641)	(130.048)	(309.503)	(651.458)	(178.139)
ΔLevel_t − 1	−0.049	−0.095	−0.205**	0.029	0.080	0.156**	0.056	0.106	0.220**
	(0.137)	(0.134)	(0.091)	(0.116)	(0.112)	(0.075)	(0.155)	(0.159)	(0.103)
Slope_t-1	0.952	2.654	0.088	0.381	−0.098	0.890***	−0.871	−1.119	−0.125
	(0.691)	(1.943)	(0.290)	(0.586)	(1.620)	(0.239)	(0.781)	(2.311)	(0.328)
Curvature_t-1	−0.239	−1.546	0.065	0.048	0.495	−0.063	1.100*	1.388	0.894***
	(0.529)	(1.344)	(0.237)	(0.449)	(1.120)	(0.195)	(0.598)	(1.598)	(0.268)
Hedgers_t-1	−261.383	928.707	−805.394	−253.107	−498.683	583.207	12.666	−795.964	859.246
	(2,101.142)	(1,753.145)	(1,169.788)	(1,780.998)	(1,461.903)	(964.290)	(2,373.746)	(2,085.595)	(1,320.876)
Speculators_t-1	−439.410	954.576	−643.329	−82.370	−707.697	477.194	254.173	−1,144.404	689.135
	(2,210.680)	(1,948.523)	(1,267.270)	(1,873.846)	(1,624.823)	(1,044.647)	(2,497.496)	(2,318.023)	(1,430.948)
α_t	−3.613	2,792.297	20.440	−678.001***	−3,069.109	−694.362***	−818.726***	−4,631.113	−841.613***
	(104.194)	(2,454.157)	(101.288)	(88.318)	(2,046.459)	(83.495)	(117.712)	(2,919.540)	(114.371)
CRBSPOT_t-1	2,470.513	−2,013.405	897.728	−1,202.109	1,472.259	−467.336	−1,637.928	2,216.331	−544.061
	(2,541.883)	(1,543.148)	(1,321.318)	(2,154.585)	(1,286.791)	(1,089.200)	(2,871.670)	(1,835.776)	(1,491.977)
Observations	76	62	138	76	62	138	76	62	138
R^2	0.299	0.308	0.154	0.201	0.825	0.719	0.258	0.843	0.684
Adjusted R^2	0.179	0.156	0.080	0.063	0.786	0.695	0.130	0.808	0.657
Residual Std. Error	104.273 (df = 64)	86.671 (df = 50)	101.646 (df = 126)	88.386 (df = 64)	72.273 (df = 50)	83.790 (df = 126)	117.802 (df = 64)	103.106 (df = 50)	114.775 (df = 126)
F Statistic	2.486** (df = 11; 64)	2.024** (df = 11; 50)	2.081** (df = 11; 126)	1.462 (df = 11; 64)	21.376*** (df = 11; 50)	29.353*** (df = 11; 126)	2.018** (df = 11; 64)	24.393*** (df = 11; 50)	24.805*** (df = 11; 126)
	Panel B: CFTC Net Position								
Equity_t-1	620.676	−815.754	−417.057	−288.574	783.764*	549.179	−311.728	1,212.825*	865.125
	(828.022)	(535.223)	(469.626)	(696.469)	(447.571)	(386.534)	(932.242)	(638.253)	(530.081)
FinancialIndex_t-1	164.017	318.936	165.672	153.459	−129.339	38.422	196.484	−167.184	64.565
	(653.321)	(479.974)	(401.044)	(549.523)	(401.371)	(330.086)	(735.552)	(572.369)	(452.670)
CRBSPOT_t-1	2,333.255	−1,919.732	833.960	−1,011.951	1,383.156	−402.800	−1,436.763	2,071.638	−455.487
	(2,477.113)	(1,521.686)	(1,307.690)	(2,083.557)	(1,272.485)	(1,076.317)	(2,788.898)	(1,814.609)	(1,476.029)
IR_t-1	−9.116	248.098	67.854	−2.071	−169.633	−61.567	2.180	−238.463	−83.647
	(101.315)	(237.262)	(81.618)	(85.218)	(198.406)	(67.177)	(114.067)	(282.934)	(92.125)
TEDRATE_t-1	7.228	68.864	32.219	−19.817	−52.448	−36.345	−27.504	−72.261	−50.369
	(47.792)	(71.979)	(35.973)	(40.199)	(60.191)	(29.608)	(53.807)	(85.834)	(40.604)
EX_t-1	151.516***	−806.857	32.671	24.558	797.695*	121.489***	15.131	1,215.500*	143.111***
	(44.448)	(545.904)	(27.572)	(37.386)	(456.503)	(22.694)	(50.043)	(650.990)	(31.121)
ΔLevel_t − 1	−0.061	−0.101	−0.201**	0.045	0.083	0.153**	0.073	0.110	0.215**
	(0.134)	(0.133)	(0.090)	(0.112)	(0.111)	(0.074)	(0.150)	(0.158)	(0.101)
Slope_t-1	1.032*	2.415	−0.035	0.212	0.063	0.994***	−1.014	−0.875	0.019
	(0.553)	(1.958)	(0.238)	(0.466)	(1.637)	(0.196)	(0.623)	(2.335)	(0.269)
Curvature_t-1	−0.230	−1.363	0.203	0.119	0.369	−0.180	1.130**	1.198	0.733***
	(0.385)	(1.360)	(0.198)	(0.324)	(1.137)	(0.163)	(0.433)	(1.622)	(0.224)
Hedgers_t-1	−462.115	−69.632	−434.283*	444.105	152.660	361.531*	548.188	246.897	488.083*
	(338.594)	(357.903)	(223.251)	(284.799)	(299.290)	(183.751)	(381.211)	(426.799)	(251.990)
Speculators_t-1	−511.852*	−179.657	−319.143*	500.587*	146.574	273.481*	620.953*	229.416	354.851*
	(298.037)	(233.154)	(188.902)	(250.685)	(194.971)	(155.479)	(335.549)	(278.035)	(213.219)
α_t	−2.575	3,882.505	20.412	−678.949***	−3,733.787*	−694.172***	−819.822***	−5,667.746*	−841.068***
	(101.889)	(2,467.942)	(100.212)	(85.701)	(2,063.775)	(82.481)	(114.713)	(2,943.017)	(113.112)
Observations	76	62	138	76	62	138	76	62	138
R^2	0.330	0.317	0.172	0.248	0.826	0.726	0.295	0.844	0.691
Adjusted R^2	0.215	0.166	0.099	0.118	0.788	0.702	0.174	0.810	0.664
Residual Std. Error	101.963 (df = 64)	86.131 (df = 50)	100.565 (df = 126)	85.763 (df = 64)	72.025 (df = 50)	82.772 (df = 126)	114.796 (df = 64)	102.711 (df = 50)	113.510 (df = 126)
F Statistic	2.867*** (df = 11; 64)	2.107** (df = 11; 50)	2.373** (df = 11; 126)	1.914* (df = 11; 64)	21.554*** (df = 11; 50)	30.364*** (df = 11; 126)	2.434** (df = 11; 64)	24.616*** (df = 11; 50)	25.618*** (df = 11; 126)

*p<0.1; **p<0.05; ***p<0.01

Note: Panel A and panel B exact follows the same regression equation 3.5.1 with only difference on the usage of type of open interest data from CFTC. Panel A (B) use long only (net) open interest to calculate $trade_{i,j,t-1}$ which is resented by *Hedgers* and *Speculators* listed in the first column.

Table 3.9: Light Crude Oil Subsample Regression Analysis under Hedging Pressure Effect

	Dependent variable :								
	ΔLevel_t			Slope_t			*Curvature_t*		
	(Before)	(After)	(Full)	(Before)	(After)	(Full)	(Before)	(After)	(Full)
	Panel B: CFTC Long Position								
Equity_t-1	−24.730	105.472**	10.212	94.253***	−98.935**	32.172	130.937***	−219.338**	44.961
	(26.604)	(44.358)	(21.605)	(25.361)	(38.689)	(22.165)	(40.797)	(81.324)	(37.881)
FinancialIndex_t-1	21.067	35.579	23.377	42.971	−15.769	12.289	25.733	−65.090	−1.907
	(28.142)	(28.317)	(18.992)	(26.828)	(24.698)	(19.485)	(43.156)	(51.915)	(33.299)
CRBSPOT_t-1	−126.479	−207.531*	−112.798*	154.092**	15.695	85.251	160.049	541.066**	183.782*
	(79.884)	(111.408)	(62.135)	(76.154)	(97.170)	(63.746)	(122.502)	(204.250)	(108.943)
IR_t-1	8.468**	23.208	6.612*	−9.145**	−0.587	−4.438	−15.098**	−109.001*	−11.336*
	(4.034)	(34.916)	(3.593)	(3.846)	(30.453)	(3.686)	(6.187)	(64.013)	(6.299)
TEDRATE_t-1	−1.242	15.605	−0.933	−2.519	−20.082*	−2.682	−2.928	−18.717	−3.209
	(1.793)	(12.642)	(1.624)	(1.710)	(11.026)	(1.666)	(2.750)	(23.176)	(2.847)
EX_t-1	5.694	9.571	11.664**	7.662	−14.394	0.914	4.220	−10.192	−10.299
	(10.056)	(21.133)	(5.618)	(9.587)	(18.432)	(5.764)	(15.421)	(38.744)	(9.850)
ΔLevel_t − 1	0.024	0.030	0.021	−0.082	−0.047	−0.019	−0.142	−0.096	−0.116
	(0.116)	(0.166)	(0.092)	(0.110)	(0.145)	(0.094)	(0.177)	(0.304)	(0.161)
Slope_t-1	0.075*	0.104	0.077***	0.976***	0.796***	0.973***	−0.027	0.073	−0.038
	(0.039)	(0.212)	(0.028)	(0.037)	(0.185)	(0.029)	(0.059)	(0.389)	(0.049)
Curvature_t-1	0.048	0.091	0.052*	−0.053	−0.110	−0.075**	0.850***	0.598***	0.810***
	(0.037)	(0.085)	(0.029)	(0.035)	(0.074)	(0.030)	(0.057)	(0.156)	(0.051)
Hedgers_t-1	−38.978	−294.669**	−85.744**	−58.907	269.459**	−6.192	−104.501	670.147***	16.085
	(78.691)	(113.442)	(42.196)	(75.016)	(98.943)	(43.291)	(120.672)	(207.979)	(73.984)
Speculators_t-1	−40.931	−261.355**	−67.109**	−42.125	196.562**	−14.964	−6.164	527.125**	35.113
	(48.593)	(106.192)	(33.527)	(46.324)	(92.620)	(34.397)	(74.517)	(194.688)	(58.784)
α_t	−0.381	134.468	−0.211	1.256	−92.400	1.415	32.755***	−337.787*	32.546***
	(4.784)	(107.372)	(4.570)	(4.560)	(93.650)	(4.688)	(7.336)	(196.851)	(8.013)
Observations	91	47	138	91	47	138	91	47	138
R^2	0.191	0.398	0.169	0.931	0.710	0.918	0.811	0.717	0.726
Adjusted R^2	0.079	0.208	0.096	0.922	0.619	0.911	0.785	0.629	0.702
Residual Std. Error	4.788 (df = 79)	3.990 (df = 35)	4.583 (df = 126)	4.564 (df = 79)	3.480 (df = 35)	4.701 (df = 126)	7.342 (df = 79)	7.315 (df = 35)	8.035 (df = 126)
F Statistic	1.701* (df = 11; 79)	2.100** (df = 11; 35)	2.322** (df = 11; 126)	97.461*** (df = 11; 79)	7.786*** (df = 11; 35)	128.475*** (df = 11; 126)	30.822*** (df = 11; 79)	8.078*** (df = 11; 35)	30.395*** (df = 11; 126)
	Panel B: CFTC Net Position								
Equity_t-1	−21.603	83.842*	8.457	94.337***	−76.805*	35.694	127.719***	−172.345*	42.117
	(26.462)	(47.047)	(21.729)	(25.258)	(41.347)	(21.900)	(40.580)	(91.884)	(37.500)
FinancialIndex_t-1	14.714	39.929	36.995**	52.044*	−21.402	9.762	55.224	−71.130	−4.708
	(28.836)	(29.836)	(18.084)	(27.524)	(26.222)	(18.226)	(44.221)	(58.271)	(31.210)
CRBSPOT_t-1	−128.671	−127.679	−111.141*	142.513*	−35.242	83.518	167.535	401.750*	179.683
	(81.100)	(110.568)	(63.229)	(77.412)	(97.172)	(63.726)	(124.371)	(215.941)	(109.124)
IR_t-1	9.285**	37.258	5.355	−10.518***	−13.903	−4.338	−18.827***	−139.986*	−11.458*
	(4.082)	(36.336)	(3.691)	(3.896)	(31.934)	(3.720)	(6.260)	(70.966)	(6.370)
TEDRATE_t-1	−1.697	19.702	−1.397	−2.800*	−25.689**	−2.831*	−3.269	−31.547	−2.975
	(1.707)	(12.514)	(1.641)	(1.630)	(10.998)	(1.654)	(2.618)	(24.440)	(2.832)
EX_t-1	−0.175	−3.330	0.175	−0.026	−9.855	−0.295	−6.961***	19.031	−7.301***
	(1.127)	(25.882)	(1.088)	(1.076)	(22.747)	(1.097)	(1.729)	(50.549)	(1.878)
ΔLevel_t − 1	0.011	0.009	0.076	−0.049	−0.062	−0.023	−0.071	−0.100	−0.128
	(0.115)	(0.172)	(0.089)	(0.110)	(0.151)	(0.090)	(0.177)	(0.336)	(0.153)
Slope_t-1	0.079**	0.021	0.068**	0.984***	0.829***	0.972***	−0.009	0.205	−0.026
	(0.037)	(0.221)	(0.030)	(0.035)	(0.194)	(0.030)	(0.056)	(0.431)	(0.052)
Curvature_t-1	0.044	0.077	0.063**	−0.048	−0.096	−0.074**	0.855***	0.637***	0.804***
	(0.037)	(0.089)	(0.029)	(0.035)	(0.078)	(0.030)	(0.057)	(0.173)	(0.051)
Hedgers_t-1	34.261	−154.363	−19.229	−64.893	179.056*	−12.286	−97.350	241.727	−34.707
	(64.373)	(103.905)	(35.820)	(61.445)	(91.317)	(36.102)	(98.718)	(202.929)	(61.820)
Speculators_t-1	15.496	−66.329*	−5.160	−18.079	61.046*	0.503	−36.602	98.302	−11.449
	(16.771)	(37.053)	(10.885)	(16.009)	(32.564)	(10.970)	(25.720)	(72.365)	(18.785)
α_t	−0.443	15.433	−0.564	1.041	41.930	1.125	32.798***	−77.334	32.688***
	(4.761)	(110.821)	(4.644)	(4.545)	(97.394)	(4.681)	(7.302)	(216.435)	(8.016)
Observations	91	47	138	91	47	138	91	47	138
R^2	0.198	0.344	0.141	0.932	0.679	0.918	0.813	0.651	0.726
Adjusted R^2	0.086	0.137	0.066	0.922	0.578	0.911	0.786	0.541	0.702
Residual Std. Error	4.768 (df = 79)	4.165 (df = 35)	4.659 (df = 126)	4.551 (df = 79)	3.660 (df = 35)	4.695 (df = 126)	7.312 (df = 79)	8.134 (df = 35)	8.040 (df = 126)
F Statistic	1.773* (df = 11; 79)	1.665 (df = 11; 35)	1.875** (df = 11; 126)	98.047*** (df = 11; 79)	6.732*** (df = 11; 35)	128.838*** (df = 11; 126)	31.130*** (df = 11; 79)	5.924*** (df = 11; 35)	30.339*** (df = 11; 126)

*p<0.1; **p<0.05; ***p<0.01

Note: Panel A and panel B exact follows the same regression equation 3.5.1 with only difference on the usage of type of open interest data from CFTC. Panel A (B) use long only (net) open interest to calculate $trade_{i,j,t-1}$ which is repsented by *Hedgers* and *Speculators* listed in the first column.

after financial crisis period. Generally, increase of the exchange rate and equity level at current time will push up the middle time-to-maturity contract price in next period after the financial crisis but have no impact before it. Although the equity coefficient result is consistent with the finding from Karstanje et al. (2017), result in this chapter specifies that this common finding is mainly due to data after the recent financial crisis[37]. Stronger trade weighted dollar exchange rate index causes higher factor level, implying positive forecasting power (Chen et al., 2010).

In the view of trading behaviour impact, the proportion of the *Hedgers* and *Speculators* long only position does not help with identifying the driving force behind. However, the net positions of both *Hedgers* and *Speculators* explain the future variation of factors in terms of full sample and subsample before the financial crisis. Net positions increase will stabilize market level fluctuation and drive up short and middle term contract price level in the next period to backwardation. The results are consistent with the normal backwardation theory idea, discussed by Hamilton and Wu (2014), Gorton et al. (2007) and Gorton and Rouwenhorst (2004). Evidences are not consistent when the sample after financial crisis is taken into consideration, which states the fact that trading behaviours from hedging pressure effect is not able to explain structural change.

The same hedging pressure effect based on the light crude oil data is reported in table 3.9. The equity market shows different effects on the light crude oil market with positive forecasting relation on the *"*Δ*Level"* and negative forecasting relation on the *"Slope"* and *"Curvature"*. Increasing volatility calculated from the spot market price index reduces oil market level innovations across three samples, even though this effect is weakened when trading behaviour data type is moving from the long only to net effect.

Interest rate component is another key indicator positively (negatively) and significantly forecast-

[37] Although commodity futures are recorded with advantages on portfolio diversification (Erb and Harvey, 2005), different evidence from single product result is acceptable

ing the level innovation (slope and curvature dynamics). Different from Karstanje et al. (2017) studies, interest rate effect finding is more robust in this case given the pricing rationale behind (spot and future pricing formula from Gorton et al. (2007), the Carry idea from Koijen et al. (2013), stochastic interest rate model from Casassus and Collin D. (2005)).

Exchange rate plays the same role as it does in the gold market. TED spread is referred to market liquidity stating negatively significant forecasting relation to the *"Slope"* factor only. The larger the differential between 3-month interbank rate and 3-month Libor rate, the more contango will be (the short-term price lower than long term one). When the limitation of borrowing money from market is obvious, it may cause unwind of trading positions or liquidity is transferred to riskless asset, driving down short-term price level (Brunnermeier et al., 2008).

The long only open interest proportion from both *Hedgers* and *Speculators* successfully forecast the future movement of three factors for the sample after the financial crisis. For the *"*Δ*Level"*, this effect holds for all three samples with significant negatively relationship, reducing the level volatility. This finding is also consistent with literature of normal backwardation theory mentioned in gold market.

Overall, in the perspective of trading behaviour, up to now, light crude oil term structure change is more likely to be explained and forecasted by the long only positions' *Hedgers* and *Speculators* in market, while gold market is only exposed to few fundamentals. This leads us to next analysis by including financial traders (marked by *Managed Money* and *Swap Dealer*).

In addition to the common information from table 3.8 and 3.9, the *Managed Money* and *Producers* traders are recorded with strong significant relations found in gold market in table 3.10 and no relation in light crude oil market in table 3.11. Results on oil market is matched with finding by Heidorn et al. (2015) who argue no forecasting effect from financial traders on WTI crude oil market.

Table 3.10: Gold Subsample Regression Analysis under Managed-Money Trading

	Dependent variable :								
	ΔLevel_t			Slope_t			*Curvature_t*		
	(Before)	(After)	(Full)	(Before)	(After)	(Full)	(Before)	(After)	(Full)
	Panel B: CFTC Long Position								
Equity_t-1	557.613	−838.346	−364.836	−225.206	794.517*	504.934	−232.540	1,221.706*	811.116
	(817.457)	(521.497)	(456.130)	(691.667)	(435.674)	(377.699)	(923.644)	(619.524)	(517.408)
FinancialIndex_t-1	268.110	249.823	287.117	37.684	−62.023	−72.286	56.674	−60.605	−82.130
	(633.906)	(477.078)	(387.675)	(536.361)	(398.564)	(321.014)	(716.249)	(566.755)	(439.756)
CRBSPOT_t-1	2,817.223	−1,813.781	921.593	−1,461.177	1,338.488	−498.368	−2,011.228	2,011.364	−578.223
	(2,453.952)	(1,480.918)	(1,289.061)	(2,076.339)	(1,237.200)	(1,067.408)	(2,772.717)	(1,759.288)	(1,462.238)
IR_t-1	−3.452	271.117	77.656	−5.479	−182.700	−66.761	−2.714	−255.231	−91.389
	(100.037)	(235.842)	(79.766)	(84.643)	(197.029)	(66.050)	(113.032)	(280.174)	(90.482)
TEDRATE_t-1	2.277	78.221	37.870	−15.178	−57.155	−40.394	−21.277	−78.272	−55.964
	(47.818)	(73.059)	(35.293)	(40.459)	(61.035)	(29.224)	(54.029)	(86.792)	(40.034)
EX_t-1	181.695***	−314.325	74.695**	2.070	433.560	89.926***	−16.264	664.391	98.995**
	(50.000)	(522.214)	(33.729)	(42.306)	(436.272)	(27.929)	(56.495)	(620.376)	(38.260)
ΔLevel_t − 1	−0.027	−0.048	−0.157*	0.013	0.043	0.119	0.033	0.051	0.169*
	(0.132)	(0.131)	(0.089)	(0.112)	(0.109)	(0.073)	(0.150)	(0.155)	(0.101)
Slope_t-1	0.499	2.291	−0.184	0.683	0.267	1.096***	−0.415	−0.575	0.159
	(0.585)	(1.887)	(0.238)	(0.495)	(1.576)	(0.197)	(0.661)	(2.241)	(0.269)
Curvature_t-1	0.202	−1.186	0.393*	−0.255	0.153	−0.312*	0.649	0.878	0.550**
	(0.431)	(1.315)	(0.206)	(0.364)	(1.099)	(0.171)	(0.486)	(1.562)	(0.234)
Producers_t-1	−1,051.099**	−1,025.477*	−1,025.906***	903.945**	810.479*	792.040***	1,172.185**	1,210.721*	1,081.723***
	(511.745)	(518.710)	(358.565)	(432.998)	(433.345)	(296.910)	(578.220)	(616.213)	(406.736)
Managed-Money_t-1	395.323	915.917	871.980***	−303.196	−946.063	−648.062**	−392.089	−1,448.869	−911.275***
	(389.325)	(741.198)	(305.266)	(329.416)	(619.217)	(252.776)	(439.897)	(880.522)	(346.276)
α_t	1.102	1,823.365	14.758	−682.109***	−2,200.906	−690.293***	−824.046***	−3,338.458	−835.850***
	(100.780)	(2,338.472)	(98.097)	(85.272)	(1,953.625)	(81.229)	(113.871)	(2,778.038)	(111.276)
Observations	76	62	138	76	62	138	76	62	138
R^2	0.345	0.355	0.207	0.255	0.836	0.735	0.306	0.854	0.701
Adjusted R^2	0.232	0.213	0.137	0.127	0.800	0.711	0.186	0.822	0.675
Residual Std. Error	100.830 (df = 64)	83.699 (df = 50)	98.410 (df = 126)	85.315 (df = 64)	69.924 (df = 50)	81.489 (df = 126)	113.928 (df = 64)	99.432 (df = 50)	111.631 (df = 126)
F Statistic	3.063*** (df = 11; 64)	2.499** (df = 11; 50)	2.985*** (df = 11; 126)	1.996** (df = 11; 64)	23.146*** (df = 11; 50)	31.691*** (df = 11; 126)	2.560*** (df = 11; 64)	26.571*** (df = 11; 50)	26.876*** (df = 11; 126)
	Panel B: CFTC Net Position								
Equity_t-1	603.429	−727.512	−422.048	−277.326	730.588	558.143	−299.304	1,127.192*	882.618*
	(807.702)	(523.385)	(464.001)	(671.647)	(438.097)	(379.516)	(900.635)	(624.334)	(521.223)
FinancialIndex_t-1	−9.890	233.006	68.429	358.695	−91.331	150.078	457.202	−106.266	209.034
	(663.312)	(476.661)	(415.146)	(551.579)	(398.987)	(339.557)	(739.632)	(568.598)	(466.343)
CRBSPOT_t-1	1,538.549	−2,044.853	731.274	−179.050	1,507.233	−286.901	−381.201	2,265.082	−307.404
	(2,466.840)	(1,507.723)	(1,312.825)	(2,051.309)	(1,262.032)	(1,073.787)	(2,750.674)	(1,798.528)	(1,474.726)
IR_t-1	19.008	285.230	82.283	−34.004	−208.746	−77.678	−37.805	−294.424	−104.826
	(103.014)	(239.849)	(83.304)	(85.662)	(200.764)	(68.136)	(114.867)	(286.110)	(93.577)
TEDRATE_t-1	30.952	75.715	47.419	−45.294	−62.761	−50.995*	−59.371	−86.982	−69.707*
	(48.845)	(71.938)	(36.834)	(40.618)	(60.215)	(30.127)	(54.466)	(85.813)	(41.376)
EX_t-1	138.669***	−897.780*	17.697	37.717	939.901**	134.011***	30.416	1,423.202**	159.298***
	(39.183)	(515.614)	(25.368)	(32.583)	(431.592)	(20.749)	(43.692)	(615.064)	(28.496)
ΔLevel_t − 1	−0.031	−0.104	−0.218**	0.016	0.091	0.168**	0.037	0.122	0.236**
	(0.131)	(0.130)	(0.089)	(0.109)	(0.109)	(0.073)	(0.146)	(0.155)	(0.100)
Slope_t-1	1.181**	1.467	−0.148	0.065	0.805	1.116***	−1.208*	0.224	0.177
	(0.545)	(2.098)	(0.263)	(0.453)	(1.756)	(0.215)	(0.608)	(2.503)	(0.295)
Curvature_t-1	−0.299	−0.672	0.261	0.185	−0.164	−0.253	1.216***	0.408	0.642***
	(0.375)	(1.465)	(0.211)	(0.312)	(1.227)	(0.173)	(0.418)	(1.748)	(0.237)
Producers_t-1	−456.057**	−383.860	−344.058**	472.271**	318.342	328.296**	596.024**	484.842	434.977**
	(226.395)	(318.801)	(161.829)	(188.260)	(266.851)	(132.363)	(252.444)	(380.291)	(181.786)
Managed-Money_t-1	−343.654**	−351.339	−209.195*	349.037***	261.335	206.827**	443.437***	388.754	266.555**
	(140.478)	(233.180)	(109.431)	(116.815)	(195.182)	(89.506)	(156.642)	(278.155)	(122.926)
α_t	−3.196	4,260.564*	27.096	−677.812***	−4,357.421**	−700.286***	−818.554***	−6,572.458**	−849.418***
	(99.809)	(2,329.201)	(99.893)	(82.997)	(1,949.647)	(81.704)	(111.294)	(2,778.451)	(112.212)
Observations	76	62	138	76	62	138	76	62	138
R^2	0.357	0.334	0.177	0.294	0.830	0.731	0.336	0.848	0.696
Adjusted R^2	0.247	0.188	0.105	0.173	0.793	0.708	0.222	0.815	0.669
Residual Std. Error	99.880 (df = 64)	85.003 (df = 50)	100.266 (df = 126)	83.056 (df = 64)	71.152 (df = 50)	82.010 (df = 126)	111.372 (df = 64)	101.398 (df = 50)	112.631 (df = 126)
F Statistic	3.233*** (df = 11; 64)	2.284** (df = 11; 50)	2.456*** (df = 11; 126)	2.427** (df = 11; 64)	22.199*** (df = 11; 50)	31.144*** (df = 11; 126)	2.949*** (df = 11; 64)	25.376*** (df = 11; 50)	26.199*** (df = 11; 126)

*p<0.1; **p<0.05; ***p<0.01

Note: Panel A and panel B exact follows the same regression equation 3.5.1 with only difference on the usage of type of open interest data from CFTC. Panel A (B) use long only (net) open interest to calculate $trade_{i,j,t-1}$ which is resented by *Producers* and *Managed Money* listed in the first column.

Table 3.11: Light Crude Oil Subsample Regression Analysis under Managed-Money Trading

	Dependent variable :								
	ΔLevel_t			Slope_t			*Curvature_t*		
	(Before)	(After)	(Full)	(Before)	(After)	(Full)	(Before)	(After)	(Full)
	Panel B: CFTC Long Position								
Equity_t-1	−25.193	111.852**	6.096	93.925***	−109.192**	36.355*	133.130***	−240.787**	49.175
	(26.569)	(48.748)	(21.964)	(25.191)	(42.316)	(21.772)	(40.701)	(90.714)	(37.753)
FinancialIndex_t-1	19.620	27.325	40.520**	31.024	−6.909	3.148	25.839	−46.548	−13.835
	(30.104)	(30.971)	(18.490)	(28.544)	(26.884)	(18.328)	(46.117)	(57.632)	(31.781)
CRBSPOT_t-1	−131.448	−132.313	−109.211*	132.762*	−39.760	68.031	153.995	363.954	171.745
	(81.117)	(117.337)	(63.722)	(76.912)	(101.854)	(63.165)	(124.264)	(218.349)	(109.530)
IR_t-1	8.516**	30.556	5.474	−8.178**	−6.092	−3.284	−15.354**	−117.982	−10.332
	(4.117)	(38.110)	(3.675)	(3.904)	(33.081)	(3.643)	(6.307)	(70.917)	(6.317)
TEDRATE_t-1	−1.551	16.413	−1.457	−2.589	−21.206*	−2.556	−3.143	−20.324	−2.865
	(1.726)	(13.228)	(1.639)	(1.637)	(11.483)	(1.625)	(2.644)	(24.616)	(2.817)
EX_t-1	−0.165	3.388	0.572	−2.630	−13.400	−2.802*	−10.005***	−4.768	−9.487***
	(2.142)	(24.121)	(1.660)	(2.031)	(20.938)	(1.646)	(3.282)	(44.886)	(2.854)
Level_t-1	0.021	0.029	0.087	−0.101	−0.042	−0.053	−0.133	−0.086	−0.158
	(0.117)	(0.181)	(0.091)	(0.111)	(0.157)	(0.090)	(0.179)	(0.337)	(0.156)
Slope_t-1	0.084	0.021	0.072*	0.932***	0.904***	0.912***	−0.083	0.466	−0.082
	(0.056)	(0.257)	(0.040)	(0.053)	(0.223)	(0.039)	(0.085)	(0.478)	(0.068)
Curvature_t-1	0.042	0.072	0.064**	−0.046	−0.110	−0.066**	0.866***	0.536**	0.815***
	(0.038)	(0.110)	(0.029)	(0.036)	(0.095)	(0.029)	(0.058)	(0.204)	(0.050)
Producers_t-1	12.350	−20.229	−3.650	28.123	41.834	36.359**	8.891	204.100	17.420
	(21.518)	(91.371)	(16.787)	(20.403)	(79.314)	(16.641)	(32.964)	(170.030)	(28.855)
Managed-Money_t-1	−10.404	−15.574	−15.046	66.746	−52.763	60.417*	105.360	−51.160	69.663
	(55.046)	(73.110)	(36.642)	(52.193)	(63.463)	(36.321)	(84.326)	(136.049)	(62.982)
α_τ	−0.332	−10.409	−0.328	1.144	58.764	1.279	32.576***	14.892	32.420***
	(4.774)	(106.747)	(4.650)	(4.527)	(92.662)	(4.609)	(7.314)	(198.643)	(7.992)
Observations	91	47	138	91	47	138	91	47	138
R^2	0.195	0.282	0.140	0.932	0.657	0.921	0.812	0.653	0.728
Adjusted R^2	0.083	0.056	0.065	0.923	0.550	0.914	0.786	0.544	0.704
Residual Std. Error	4.777 (df = 79)	4.357 (df = 35)	4.661 (df = 126)	4.530 (df = 79)	3.782 (df = 35)	4.620 (df = 126)	7.319 (df = 79)	8.108 (df = 35)	8.011 (df = 126)
F Statistic	1.739* (df = 11; 79)	1.247 (df = 11; 35)	1.864* (df = 11; 126)	99.051*** (df = 11; 79)	6.103*** (df = 11; 35)	133.451*** (df = 11; 126)	31.063*** (df = 11; 79)	5.983*** (df = 11; 35)	30.642*** (df = 11; 126)
	Panel B: CFTC Net Position								
Equity_t-1	−25.154	110.019**	9.006	94.044***	−102.367**	33.405	131.046***	−224.168**	40.601
	(26.525)	(46.279)	(21.791)	(25.272)	(40.065)	(21.705)	(41.233)	(86.932)	(37.651)
FinancialIndex_t-1	23.619	28.182	36.936**	38.038	−12.118	11.866	45.334	−54.545	−2.632
	(28.939)	(29.976)	(18.145)	(27.572)	(25.951)	(18.073)	(44.985)	(56.307)	(31.351)
CRBSPOT_t-1	−132.413*	−123.688	−106.745*	152.679**	−15.792	76.742	175.117	414.206*	173.623
	(79.412)	(117.245)	(63.279)	(75.660)	(101.501)	(63.030)	(123.445)	(220.236)	(109.334)
IR_t-1	8.297**	27.632	5.309	−8.778**	−4.112	−3.724	−17.015***	−117.222	−10.440*
	(4.036)	(37.823)	(3.645)	(3.846)	(32.744)	(3.631)	(6.275)	(71.048)	(6.298)
TEDRATE_t-1	−1.350	15.953	−1.497	−2.709	−22.907**	−2.502	−3.738	−23.796	−2.956
	(1.715)	(12.624)	(1.639)	(1.634)	(10.929)	(1.633)	(2.666)	(23.713)	(2.832)
EX_t-1	0.633	−2.933	−0.004	−0.206	−20.842	−0.067	−7.109***	−3.830	−7.289***
	(1.251)	(32.441)	(1.107)	(1.192)	(28.085)	(1.102)	(1.944)	(60.938)	(1.912)
Level_t-1	0.015	0.031	0.078	−0.094	−0.104	−0.027	−0.110	−0.186	−0.124
	(0.116)	(0.181)	(0.089)	(0.111)	(0.157)	(0.089)	(0.181)	(0.340)	(0.154)
Slope_t-1	0.061	−0.002	0.084*	0.943***	0.852***	0.906***	0.014	0.270	−0.067
	(0.052)	(0.234)	(0.045)	(0.050)	(0.203)	(0.045)	(0.082)	(0.440)	(0.077)
Curvature_t-1	0.049	0.092	0.060**	−0.049	−0.127	−0.059*	0.841***	0.558***	0.815***
	(0.037)	(0.100)	(0.030)	(0.035)	(0.087)	(0.030)	(0.058)	(0.188)	(0.052)
Producers_t-1	11.012	−17.515	−3.715	5.984	23.566	9.308	1.365	58.418	4.560
	(9.592)	(22.522)	(5.747)	(9.139)	(19.497)	(5.724)	(14.910)	(42.305)	(9.929)
Managed-Money_t-1	−0.357	−3.734	−0.873	4.888	−4.318	5.481*	−4.654	−1.327	1.607
	(5.304)	(8.195)	(3.220)	(5.054)	(7.094)	(3.207)	(8.246)	(15.393)	(5.563)
α_τ	−0.450	6.827	−0.531	1.240	100.505	1.240	33.005***	48.352	32.973***
	(4.767)	(140.658)	(4.643)	(4.541)	(121.770)	(4.624)	(7.410)	(264.215)	(8.022)
Observations	91	47	138	91	47	138	91	47	138
R^2	0.196	0.294	0.142	0.932	0.665	0.920	0.807	0.652	0.726
Adjusted R^2	0.084	0.072	0.067	0.922	0.560	0.913	0.780	0.543	0.702
Residual Std. Error	4.773 (df = 79)	4.319 (df = 35)	4.656 (df = 126)	4.548 (df = 79)	3.739 (df = 35)	4.638 (df = 126)	7.420 (df = 79)	8.113 (df = 35)	8.045 (df = 126)
F Statistic	1.754* (df = 11; 79)	1.325 (df = 11; 35)	1.889** (df = 11; 126)	98.210*** (df = 11; 79)	6.318*** (df = 11; 35)	132.330*** (df = 11; 126)	30.025*** (df = 11; 79)	5.972*** (df = 11; 35)	30.287*** (df = 11; 126)

$^{*}p<0.1$; $^{**}p<0.05$; $^{***}p<0.01$

Note: Panel A and panel B exact follows the same regression equation 3.5.1 with only difference on the usage of type of open interest data from CFTC. Panel A (B) use long only (net) open interest to calculate $trade_{i,j,t-1}$ which is resented by *Producers* and *Managed Money* listed in the first column.

Within gold market, among these two types of traders, the *Producers*' long only position holds for all three samples with negative forecasting power in the *"ΔLevel"* and positive forecasting power in the *"Slope"* and *"Curvature"* factors. Impact from the *Managed Money* trader (according to CFTC report, the *Managed Money* trader is categorised as those who are commodity trading advisor service, commodity pool operators and hedge funds with conducting commodity trading for client) only hold for full sample.

From table 3.10, long only position held by the *Managed Money* trader has opposite sign compared with the *Producers* side, stating that speculation from managing money in commodity futures market contribute to increasing of market level fluctuation and convert market from backwardation to contango.

By considering the *Swap Dealer* effect in table 3.12 and 3.13, there is not significant effect found for both gold and light crude oil market. Overall, analysis of different types of traders' effect in market shows that gold market is more controlled by the traditional *Producers* within financial crisis period and light crude oil market is more structured by the *Hedgers* and *Speculators* at the same sample period. Apart from this, gold market is less affected by fundamental information, except for equity and exchange rate market, while light crude oil market is well forecasted by equity, exchange rate, interest rate market, spot market volatility and TED spread. Therefore, there is a distinct difference (different fundamental and participators) among these two markets, which also support the different change locations from functional test part.

3.6 Summary

This chapter first extends recent research findings by Bardsley et al. (2017) in terms of functional change point detection by investigating the asymptotic property of a new functional change detection

Table 3.12: God Subsample Regression Analysis under Swap-Dealer Trading

	Dependent variable :								
		ΔLevel_t			Slope_t			*Curvature_t*	
	(Before)	(After)	(Full)	(Before)	(After)	(Full)	(Before)	(After)	(Full)
					Panel B: CFTC Long Position				
Equity_t-1	378.691	−922.507*	−442.046	−24.600	842.375*	582.065	29.292	1,292.700**	912.997*
	(827.382)	(528.747)	(474.169)	(692.791)	(447.223)	(389.694)	(925.386)	(638.213)	(534.774)
FinancialIndex_t-1	251.209	448.793	407.615	116.481	−237.527	−139.731	161.080	−327.618	−184.330
	(638.573)	(463.872)	(402.321)	(534.695)	(392.352)	(330.645)	(714.212)	(559.908)	(453.742)
CRBSPOT_t-1	2,391.971	−1,698.427	1,285.163	−925.278	1,312.521	−766.875	−1,310.228	1,977.081	−956.351
	(2,494.753)	(1,502.521)	(1,322.704)	(2,088.927)	(1,270.859)	(1,087.058)	(2,790.257)	(1,813.588)	(1,491.761)
IR_t-1	7.506	334.198	43.279	−26.920	−237.373	−45.424	−30.937	−338.345	−59.984
	(102.596)	(234.891)	(82.088)	(85.907)	(198.675)	(67.464)	(114.749)	(283.520)	(92.580)
TEDRATE_t-1	7.761	112.886	31.720	−25.212	−83.376	−38.226	−34.475	−117.864	−52.116
	(48.972)	(72.266)	(37.037)	(41.006)	(61.124)	(30.439)	(54.773)	(87.227)	(41.771)
EX_t-1	129.182*	−734.822	31.317	63.094	788.471**	131.940***	63.440	1,203.254**	154.817***
	(65.751)	(462.360)	(45.320)	(55.055)	(391.072)	(37.246)	(73.539)	(558.083)	(51.113)
Level_t-1	−0.023	−0.085	−0.202**	0.009	0.076	0.157**	0.028	0.102	0.221**
	(0.132)	(0.129)	(0.091)	(0.111)	(0.110)	(0.075)	(0.148)	(0.156)	(0.103)
Slope_t-1	1.101*	2.756	0.159	0.053	−0.213	0.826***	−1.236*	−1.310	−0.215
	(0.637)	(1.868)	(0.220)	(0.533)	(1.580)	(0.181)	(0.713)	(2.255)	(0.248)
Curvature_t-1	−0.269	−1.589	0.010	0.229	0.554	−0.011	1.280**	1.491	0.968***
	(0.456)	(1.291)	(0.175)	(0.382)	(1.092)	(0.144)	(0.510)	(1.558)	(0.197)
Producers_t-1	−272.109	−488.295	−212.112	113.630	372.794	124.476	142.821	547.314	163.920
	(535.226)	(430.594)	(326.586)	(448.160)	(364.204)	(268.403)	(598.624)	(519.740)	(368.327)
Swap-Dealer_t-1	941.416	928.700	274.341	−1,178.100	−22.024	−415.435	−1,540.859	21.423	−513.720
	(961.028)	(1,367.494)	(673.051)	(804.696)	(1,156.651)	(553.144)	(1,074.862)	(1,650.606)	(759.075)
α_t	3.578	3,599.133*	30.638	−684.278***	−3,808.361**	−703.450***	−826.862***	−5,786.887**	−853.900***
	(100.819)	(2,021.046)	(101.120)	(84.419)	(1,709.437)	(83.105)	(112.762)	(2,439.464)	(114.045)
Observations	76	62	138	76	62	138	76	62	138
R^2	0.344	0.341	0.156	0.270	0.828	0.722	0.319	0.846	0.686
Adjusted R^2	0.231	0.196	0.083	0.145	0.790	0.698	0.202	0.812	0.658
Residual Std. Error	100.886 (df = 64)	84.578 (df = 50)	101.480 (df = 126)	84.474 (df = 64)	71.538 (df = 50)	83.401 (df = 126)	112.836 (df = 64)	102.088 (df = 50)	114.450 (df = 126)
F Statistic	3.053*** (df = 11; 64)	2.353** (df = 11; 50)	2.125** (df = 11; 126)	2.152** (df = 11; 64)	21.911*** (df = 11; 50)	29.735*** (df = 11; 126)	2.723*** (df = 11; 64)	24.973*** (df = 11; 50)	25.011*** (df = 11; 126)
					Panel B: CFTC Net Position				
Equity_t-1	322.498	−723.644	−323.953	40.387	718.937	479.870	99.236	1,109.794*	769.415
	(852.011)	(533.682)	(476.552)	(714.278)	(446.072)	(392.454)	(954.883)	(636.681)	(537.581)
FinancialIndex_t-1	62.900	271.171	254.370	323.886	−110.588	−15.670	406.817	−134.843	−16.496
	(700.164)	(485.869)	(420.444)	(586.978)	(406.108)	(346.247)	(784.701)	(579.640)	(474.287)
CRBSPOT_t-1	1,658.087	−1,998.839	846.079	−190.166	1,406.761	−389.888	−412.698	2,115.123	−447.061
	(2,583.538)	(1,540.909)	(1,330.948)	(2,165.892)	(1,287.951)	(1,096.072)	(2,895.473)	(1,838.298)	(1,501.393)
IR_t-1	25.201	216.586	57.399	−46.172	−159.948	−55.702	−52.338	−221.850	−74.773
	(109.930)	(240.407)	(84.570)	(92.159)	(200.941)	(69.645)	(123.203)	(286.804)	(95.400)
TEDRATE_t-1	36.455	59.896	33.511	−54.325	−51.694	−39.052	−70.302	−70.525	−53.124
	(53.189)	(72.633)	(37.764)	(44.591)	(60.709)	(31.100)	(59.611)	(86.650)	(42.600)
EX_t-1	128.673***	−808.350	11.942	45.624	720.831	140.081***	40.816	1,096.168	166.871***
	(40.680)	(591.091)	(25.559)	(34.104)	(494.056)	(21.049)	(45.592)	(705.169)	(28.833)
Level_t-1	−0.047	−0.113	−0.198**	0.032	0.085	0.154**	0.058	0.114	0.214**
	(0.135)	(0.135)	(0.093)	(0.113)	(0.113)	(0.076)	(0.151)	(0.161)	(0.105)
Slope_t-1	1.239**	2.620	−0.012	−0.046	−0.199	0.988***	−1.341*	−1.270	0.007
	(0.616)	(1.965)	(0.260)	(0.517)	(1.643)	(0.214)	(0.691)	(2.345)	(0.293)
Curvature_t-1	−0.437	−1.537	0.153	0.362	0.567	−0.144	1.436***	1.497	0.780***
	(0.436)	(1.354)	(0.206)	(0.366)	(1.132)	(0.170)	(0.489)	(1.616)	(0.233)
Producers_t-1	−97.355	11.212	−69.869	123.878	25.503	64.694	150.897	49.232	90.323
	(144.574)	(186.045)	(92.864)	(121.202)	(155.504)	(76.476)	(162.029)	(221.951)	(104.756)
Swap-Dealer_t-1	251.001	104.768	−34.888	−286.690*	8.348	11.408	−359.225*	13.070	29.910
	(180.003)	(185.642)	(104.168)	(150.905)	(155.167)	(85.786)	(201.737)	(221.470)	(117.508)
α_t	−4.732	3,820.853	18.462	−676.249***	−3,341.781	−692.903***	−816.569***	−5,056.425	−839.143***
	(102.819)	(2,661.930)	(101.354)	(86.198)	(2,224.943)	(83.468)	(115.234)	(3,175.671)	(114.333)
Observations	76	62	138	76	62	138	76	62	138
R^2	0.318	0.309	0.153	0.239	0.824	0.720	0.289	0.842	0.685
Adjusted R^2	0.201	0.157	0.080	0.108	0.785	0.695	0.166	0.807	0.657
Residual Std. Error	102.894 (df = 64)	86.636 (df = 50)	101.664 (df = 126)	86.260 (df = 64)	72.414 (df = 50)	83.723 (df = 126)	115.317 (df = 64)	103.356 (df = 50)	114.684 (df = 126)
F Statistic	2.710*** (df = 11; 64)	2.029** (df = 11; 50)	2.076** (df = 11; 126)	1.825* (df = 11; 64)	21.275*** (df = 11; 50)	29.418*** (df = 11; 126)	2.359** (df = 11; 64)	24.253*** (df = 11; 50)	24.863*** (df = 11; 126)

$^{*}p<0.1$; $^{**}p<0.05$; $^{***}p<0.01$

Note: Panel A and panel B exact follows the same regression equation 3.5.1 with only difference on the usage of type of open interest data from CFTC. Panel A (B) use long only (net) open interest to calculate $trade_{i,j,t-1}$ which is resented by *Producers* and *Swap Dealer* listed in the first column.

Table 3.13: Light Crude Oil Subsample Regression Analysis under Swap-Dealer Trading

	Dependent variable:								
	$\Delta Level\_t$			Slope_t			$Curvature\_t$		
	(Before)	(After)	(Full)	(Before)	(After)	(Full)	(Before)	(After)	(Full)
	Panel B: CFTC Long Position								
Equity_t-1	−26.073	78.352	5.175	95.147***	−80.898*	31.241	135.006***	−162.512*	44.786
	(26.531)	(48.350)	(21.568)	(25.454)	(43.676)	(21.783)	(41.111)	(90.800)	(37.469)
FinancialIndex_t-1	11.284	41.581	39.699**	47.837*	−17.684	11.864	51.944	−78.177	−4.713
	(29.577)	(30.617)	(17.534)	(28.377)	(27.657)	(17.708)	(45.831)	(57.498)	(30.460)
CRBSPOT_t-1	−142.896*	−154.557	−110.144*	155.733**	−34.728	76.567	189.657	397.658*	180.769
	(80.650)	(114.064)	(62.976)	(77.376)	(103.036)	(63.601)	(124.970)	(214.209)	(109.401)
IR_t-1	9.261**	29.403	5.473	−9.729**	−7.032	−3.867	−17.765***	−117.830*	−10.904*
	(4.067)	(36.768)	(3.627)	(3.902)	(33.213)	(3.663)	(6.302)	(69.049)	(6.300)
TEDRATE_t-1	−1.482	21.967*	−1.370	−2.930*	−26.138**	−2.741*	−3.679	−33.620	−3.106
	(1.701)	(12.834)	(1.622)	(1.632)	(11.593)	(1.638)	(2.636)	(24.101)	(2.818)
EX_t-1	1.069	−9.673	−2.455	−1.250	−0.243	−0.240	−7.718*	28.573	−4.892
	(2.852)	(22.772)	(2.039)	(2.736)	(20.571)	(2.059)	(4.419)	(42.765)	(3.541)
Level_t-1	0.012	0.063	0.068	−0.075	−0.072	−0.019	−0.091	−0.167	−0.112
	(0.115)	(0.175)	(0.088)	(0.110)	(0.158)	(0.089)	(0.178)	(0.329)	(0.153)
Slope_t-1	0.076**	−0.002	0.074**	0.982***	0.924***	0.951***	−0.004	0.521	−0.045
	(0.037)	(0.248)	(0.031)	(0.035)	(0.224)	(0.031)	(0.057)	(0.466)	(0.054)
Curvature_t-1	0.045	0.130	0.059**	−0.056	−0.149	−0.070**	0.851***	0.414*	0.813***
	(0.037)	(0.110)	(0.029)	(0.036)	(0.100)	(0.029)	(0.058)	(0.207)	(0.051)
Producers_t-1	−1.876	23.583	31.411	16.897	51.173	9.445	−10.041	163.283	−33.083
	(31.768)	(86.502)	(23.133)	(30.478)	(78.139)	(23.363)	(49.226)	(162.449)	(40.187)
Swap-Dealer_t-1	−31.028	103.341	46.245	14.741	−34.163	−11.091	21.088	−170.908	−42.642
	(50.981)	(64.280)	(30.594)	(48.912)	(58.065)	(30.898)	(78.998)	(120.716)	(53.147)
α_t	−0.360	20.642	−0.349	1.259	1.875	1.585	32.756***	−98.387	32.735***
	(4.763)	(90.165)	(4.607)	(4.570)	(81.448)	(4.653)	(7.381)	(169.328)	(8.004)
Observations	91	47	138	91	47	138	91	47	138
R^2	0.198	0.330	0.154	0.931	0.654	0.919	0.809	0.670	0.727
Adjusted R^2	0.087	0.120	0.080	0.921	0.545	0.912	0.782	0.567	0.703
Residual Std. Error	4.767 (df = 79)	4.207 (df = 35)	4.622 (df = 126)	4.574 (df = 79)	3.800 (df = 35)	4.668 (df = 126)	7.387 (df = 79)	7.901 (df = 35)	8.030 (df = 126)
F Statistic	1.777* (df = 11; 79)	1.568 (df = 11; 35)	2.087** (df = 11; 126)	97.016*** (df = 11; 79)	6.013*** (df = 11; 35)	130.483*** (df = 11; 126)	30.356*** (df = 11; 79)	6.469*** (df = 11; 35)	30.450*** (df = 11; 126)
	Panel B: CFTC Net Position								
Equity_t-1	−23.151	97.886**	8.371	94.565***	−91.004**	31.150	132.557***	−203.910**	40.922
	(26.503)	(45.490)	(21.778)	(25.513)	(40.257)	(21.971)	(41.374)	(86.552)	(37.669)
FinancialIndex_t-1	22.721	31.973	33.541*	48.000*	−14.601	16.275	35.684	−59.842	1.323
	(26.735)	(29.612)	(18.456)	(25.736)	(26.206)	(18.619)	(41.736)	(56.342)	(31.923)
CRBSPOT_t-1	−133.324*	−159.190	−108.651*	152.934**	−25.885	83.129	173.997	431.551*	176.376
	(79.062)	(114.400)	(63.104)	(76.106)	(101.240)	(63.662)	(123.423)	(217.665)	(109.151)
IR_t-1	8.646**	30.942	5.437	−9.711**	−4.980	−4.427	−15.850**	−120.589*	−10.661*
	(3.915)	(37.298)	(3.617)	(3.769)	(33.008)	(3.649)	(6.112)	(70.966)	(6.256)
TEDRATE_t-1	−1.421	18.979	−1.427	−2.820*	−24.375**	−2.651	−3.709	−27.527	−3.045
	(1.705)	(12.693)	(1.637)	(1.641)	(11.233)	(1.651)	(2.661)	(24.150)	(2.831)
EX_t-1	1.065	−18.492	−0.216	0.056	−4.606	0.005	−6.915***	23.758	−7.070***
	(1.310)	(30.613)	(1.150)	(1.261)	(27.092)	(1.160)	(2.044)	(58.247)	(1.989)
Level_t-1	−0.003	0.048	0.072	−0.076	−0.093	−0.011	−0.144	−0.189	−0.116
	(0.116)	(0.176)	(0.089)	(0.112)	(0.156)	(0.089)	(0.182)	(0.335)	(0.153)
Slope_t-1	0.029	0.101	0.096**	0.977***	0.864***	0.950***	−0.047	0.204	−0.073
	(0.054)	(0.237)	(0.046)	(0.052)	(0.210)	(0.047)	(0.084)	(0.451)	(0.080)
Curvature_t-1	0.056	0.067	0.054*	−0.053	−0.132	−0.068**	0.852***	0.572***	0.820***
	(0.038)	(0.098)	(0.032)	(0.036)	(0.087)	(0.032)	(0.059)	(0.187)	(0.055)
Producers_t-1	10.070	−12.606	−1.685	6.370	25.791	4.612	0.100	56.822	1.916
	(9.606)	(21.732)	(5.457)	(9.247)	(19.232)	(5.506)	(14.996)	(41.348)	(9.440)
Swap-Dealer_t-1	−7.826	19.993	3.640	1.095	−2.529	−0.231	−8.656	−17.714	−3.630
	(9.224)	(16.686)	(5.741)	(8.880)	(14.767)	(5.791)	(14.400)	(31.749)	(9.930)
α_t	−0.585	67.782	−0.405	1.218	30.806	1.462	32.892***	−65.624	32.879***
	(4.748)	(128.725)	(4.642)	(4.570)	(113.917)	(4.683)	(7.412)	(244.921)	(8.029)
Observations	91	47	138	91	47	138	91	47	138
R^2	0.204	0.318	0.144	0.931	0.662	0.918	0.807	0.655	0.726
Adjusted R^2	0.093	0.103	0.069	0.921	0.556	0.911	0.780	0.547	0.702
Residual Std. Error	4.752 (df = 79)	4.245 (df = 35)	4.650 (df = 126)	4.574 (df = 79)	3.757 (df = 35)	4.691 (df = 126)	7.418 (df = 79)	8.078 (df = 35)	8.044 (df = 126)
F Statistic	1.835* (df = 11; 79)	1.483 (df = 11; 35)	1.924** (df = 11; 126)	96.997*** (df = 11; 79)	6.227*** (df = 11; 35)	129.074*** (df = 11; 126)	30.045*** (df = 11; 79)	6.051*** (df = 11; 35)	30.303*** (df = 11; 126)

*p<0.1; **p<0.05; ***p<0.01

Note: Panel A and panel B exact follows the same regression equation 3.5.1 with only difference on the usage of type of open interest data from CFTC. Panel A (B) use long only (net) open interest to calculate $trade_{i,j,t-1}$ which is resented by *Producers* and *Swap Dealer* listed in the first column.

statistics based on Kolmogorov-Smirnov functional formula under both null and alternative hypothesis. After constructing and conducting simulations under same mean change settings, new statistics performs less conservative under the null but more powerful under the alternative. Apart from this, simulation results also confirm that break point (allowing the heterogeneous information included in functional error curve generation) needs to be considered and fail to do this will diminish testing power remarkably.

Sensitivity analysis for this new statistic is conducted with respect to the change point magnitude. Monotonic property is well observed under the scenario where change point is equal to the setting of break point and not be guaranteed under the scenario where change point is not equal to the setting of break point. Sample size does make a great contribution on the rate of convergence given the fact that testing power under alternative with 500 sample sizes converge to descent probability much quicker than testing power under 250 sample sizes. Results up to now are consistent with Bardsley et al. (2017) findings even though statistics functional form is different.

Real data application is also tested in this chapter with focus on commodity futures market with data from gold and light crude oil products. By smoothing data and performing functional change detection procedure, two significant change point on the mean of functional mean observations: 23/01/2009 for gold market and 10/10/2008 for light crude oil market are documented. Segmentation method is applied and no further change point is found. These results are robust to fully functional projection method which proposes the same change location and significance as Dynamic Nelson-Siegel method does.

Economic intuition behind these two change points are studied via subsample analysis in the framework of multivariate forecasting regression. In general, two markets show strong segmentations for change occurrence reasons. Regarding the common information explanation, future trend of gold market on three factors are only explained by equity and exchange rate market current change, while light crude oil market future movement is nearly exposed to current movement of all common variables, especially significant larger impact from equity and spot market volatility sides.

As for the market heterogeneous effects, based on the open interest position data from the Commodity Futures Trading Commission (CFTC), participator recorded as the *Producers* makes consistent forecasting contribution across all subsamples for gold market. The larger the proportion of long only position for the *Producers* compared with other trading participators (*Managed Money*, *Swap Dealer*, *Hedgers* and *Speculators*), the lower the price level volatility and more stable of future backwardation market situation. While in light crude oil market, positions taken by both the *Hedgers* and *Speculators* have well forecasted and explained the future movement of three projected factors after financial crisis period. Current increasing of long only positions will leads to next period volatility reduction on level and trend for market backwardation. However, for sample before financial crisis, no market participator can forecast the future trend.

Chapter 4

Commodity Futures Basis Term Structure Forecasting

This chapter investigates the forecasting power of the functional predictive factors (functional autoregressive model with 1 period lag) on the futures basis term structure dynamics. Compared with other functional and non-functional forecasting models, functional predictive factor outperforms both statistically and economically. Moreover, the Model Confidence Set, used to select the best model set with respect to loss functions, shows that the functional predict factors have incomparable advantages on futures contracts forecasting with time-to-maturity date up to 10 months. The results are robust to different loss functions settings. Trading application based on forecasted futures basis is proposed and implemented showing superior advantages on strategy variance reduction and return magnification compared with traditional backwardation theory implied trading style.

4.1 Introduction

Motivated by the continuous fundamental important pricing theory, normal backwardation theory, see (Gorton et al., 2007 and Litzenberger and Rabinowitz, 1995), recent question of spot market hedging via futures contract when asymmetric futures basis effect matters, see (Lien and Yang, 2008), factors dynamics embedded in term structure idea, see convenience yield modelling from stochastic process (Schwartz, 1997 and Casassus and Collin D., 2005), figuring out and predicting the dynamics of futures factor, especially futures basis variation, plays a non-trivial role in understanding of futures market data dynamics. Meanwhile, inspired by the recent term structure data modelling, fitting and forecasting in the global commodity futures market, see (Karstanje et al., 2017, GrØnborg and Lunde, 2016 and Baruník and Malinska, 2016), this chapter extends current literature futures basis factor modelling from the single time series to the term structure level. By observing the future basis on the term structure level, it is more natural to call this format data term structure futures basis curve, which is similar to the yield curve borrowed from bond market.

Instead of dealing with discrete data directly, like Dynamic Nelson-Siegel model from Diebold and Rudebusch (2013), this chapter stands on the line of functional data analysis, smoothing all discrete data with pre-determined basis functions, and adopts functional autoregressive process to fit smoothed curve data. Fitting high dimension data via functional analysis is more natural and parsimonious (Ramsay, 2006, Horváth and Kokoszka, 2012, Kargin and Onatski, 2008 and Kokoszka and Reimherr, 2013).

To formalise so called curve data idea, futures basis (logarithm price difference among two contracts with same underlying but different maturities) is then measured for all maturity range at each time point observation. Capturing and forecasting the dynamics of futures basis makes contribution to numerous aspects on futures research, for example pricing theory, risk factor trading application, investment shocks and different market correlation analysis (Fernandez-Perez et al., 2017*b*, Gorton et al., 2007, Fuertes et al., 2015, Koijen et al., 2013, Yang, 2013 and Roll et al., 2007). Given the cross-sectional curve data, a new functional forecasting method, namely predictive factors method, introduced by Kargin and Onatski (2008) is used to depict their variations following the autoregressive process with lag order 1.

Real data application is conducted on the crude oil futures market over the past 20 years. This new functional predictive factor method shows superior advantage on forecasting error reduction with contract's maturity up to 10 months, which is still valid and robust compared to all other functional and non-functional candidate models. It also holds the good advantages on forecasting shape keeping compared with other models, except for Naive approach which simply looks at past observation. However, forecasting futures basis under predictive factors method shows competitive merits on new variance minimization trading strategy, generating theoretically annualized average return (Sharpe ratio) without and with transaction at 40% (7.92) and 28% (5.44) maximum.

Up to this writing moment, there is no prior research talking about futures basis modelling on the term structure curve idea and this chapter is trying to fill this gap for the purpose of offering (1) a new perspective of practising real futures basis modelling and forecasting method compared with the current Dynamic Nelson-Siegel model, (2) forecasting comparison in terms of different aspects (overall forecasting error reduction, forecasting error dynamics, forecasting curve shape preserving, economically trading advantages) (3) new application idea, via variance minimisation framework, on multi-contract trading and robustness analysis via transaction cost consideration.

To sum up, this chapter is organised as follows: section 2 states literature related to both forecasting and related topics, section 3 goes through both data and methodology used in this chapter, section 4 covers all empirical analysis results as well as new real trading application, section 5 concludes all findings in the end.

4.2 Literature Background

Different from other methods in high dimensional data modelling, functional data analysis acts as a more general way of defining observations as functions over certain sets, see more examples from Ramsay (2006). General theory is functional linear dependent (functional observation is linear represented by another one) and autoregressive model (functional observation is linear represented by itself lag value) is extensively studied and proposed by Bosq (2000) and recent version with more application, see (Bosq, 2012).

In this framework, all functional processes are defined in Hilbert and Banach spaces by assuming that functional data (error) observation is a mean zero (mean zero i.i.d with finite variation) element in spaces. Linear or autoregressive operator is an estimated variable linking and transferring the current functional observation to the future one.

For simplicity, this chapter considers only autoregressive process with order 1 (AR(1) therefore in the following content) for commodity futures data under the framework of functional analysis. From the literature view of the futures basis dynamics, mean-reversion idea is widely discussed on its time series modelling (Fong and See, 2003, Monoyios and Sarno, 2002 and Roll et al., 2007). This is mainly depending on single continuous contract series which does not account for maturity structure effect. Functional autoregressive model is somehow treated as a straightforward way of handling the structure effect. In the meantime, the long run mean of a mean-reversion process is constant when data stationary property is satisfied.

To estimate the functional linear operator, empirical functional principal components analysis (EFPCs therefore in the following content) is a widely used technique with comprehensive theoretical development in (Bosq, 2000). Given the well-estimated eigenfunctions and eigenvalues from functional observations, EFPCs method has good property on its convergence. More recent autoregressive modelling, forecasting and theoretical extensions can be seen from (Bosq, 2012, Antoniadis and Sapatinas, 2003, Besse et al., 2000 and Hörmann et al., 2010).

In this chapter, the key interest of modelling and forecasting method is dependent on the recent predictive factors model in autoregressive framework via Kargin and Onatski (2008). Different from Bosq (2000) who use EFPCs to construct the operator, predictive factors method filters out the factors that can minimize the forecasted error. Corresponding empirical functional forecasting performance comparison has been studied by Besse et al. (2000) and Didericksen et al. (2012). However, they argue that the Estimated Kernel method (the same idea to EFPCs) in the spirit of Bosq (2000) has the best performance. To fully explore predictive factors forecasting power, this kernel benchmark and other functional Naive, functional Random Walk method are included in this chapter. Other comprehensive review on forecasting comparison and application on these can be referred to (Horváth and Kokoszka, 2012).

Non-functional term structure level modelling and forecasting by Diebold and Rudebusch (2013), Dynamic Nelson-Siegel (DNS therefore in the following content), is also studied in this chapter due to recent increasing popularity with its application on commodity futures market. Baruník and Malinska (2016) extend DNS model via adding neutral network idea, GrØnborg and Lunde (2016) model DNS factors based on copula framework, and Karstanje et al. (2017) generalize DNS model with consideration of seasonality factor). Following by Diebold and Rudebusch (2013), the same approach to estimate and forecast term structure data with assumption that lambda is fixed for whole sample period is used. Although there are some studies discussing the importance of time-varying lambda value in DNS model, see (Hautsch and Ou, 2012 and Koopman et al., 2010), this chapter will ignore this as their tests do not show strong benefits by including this extra time-varying property.

For forecasting procedure, there is a strong assumption that linear operator is constant and not changed over time. There are studies discussing functional autoregressive and linear model change point detection theory (Horváth et al., 2014, Horváth et al., 2010 and Horváth and Kokoszka, 2012), which needs extra change detection implementation on estimated linear operator. This is out of the control and purpose of this chapter. In this study, linear operator is assumed to be constant at each estimation procedure. It also directs to the recent research, adaptive functional autoregressive forecasting method, proposed by Chen and Li (2017) who overcome this issue by estimating the time-varying operator based on the maximum likelihood method. For simplicity, rolling window method is used to minimize errors introduced in estimation by assuming each rolling sample estimator are constant and unbiased.

Storage and backwardation are important pricing theories in the commodity futures market, which differs from the futures index market due to physical inventory cost (Working, 1949 and Litzenberger and Rabinowitz, 1995). The basis differential (log difference between spot price and futures price) under backwardation or contango scenario are import for hedging and speculation activities.

Hedging and speculation for risk management, especially hedging spot market position via futures contract, indicate the necessity of trading in futures market by (Johnson, 1960 and Ederington, 1979. However, linear fitting with minimization of unconditional variance cause hedging risk due to the time-varying basis risk (hedging ratio). Recent progress on time-varying hedging ratio can be referred to GARCH modelling by (Park and Switzer, 1995 and Lien, 2009), regime switching model by Alizadeh and Nomikos (2004) and co-integration idea and non-matching hedging (time-to-maturity relating to spot market on futures contract is not consistent) by (Ghoddusi and Emamzadehfard (2017) and reference inside).

In this chapter, an approach used differs from the traditional hedging strategy or recent state or regime modelling. A optimal way for trading two futures contracts simultaneously under the framework of portfolio variance minimization idea is proposed. New strategy implementation is purely dependent on the futures basis relation across different time-to-maturity range. Given the forecasted futures basis values predicted from models, a new trading strategy is implemented to capture the dynamic futures basis differential premium, which is stated in the last section of empirical analysis.

4.3 Data and Methodology

In this section, data selection and method implementation in empirical analysis are demonstrated in the following subsection respectively. Adaptive to the futures market characters, before transferring the discrete data to functional observation via basis function smoothing (Ramsay, 2006), futures data are first re-organized consistent with the literature. Functional forecasting following autoregressive method (Kargin and Onatski, 2008) and statistical test based on (Hansen et al., 2011) are illustrated in the second sections.

4.3.1 Data Description

Energy product, Light Crude Oil, from the New York Mercantile Exchange (NYMEX) with daily closing price data spanning from 01/01/1985 to 27/10/2016 are collected from the DataStream. The final in-sample training data is covering from 01/01/1985 to 15/04/1999, and left data period is for out-of-sample forecasting test, 16/04/1999 - 27/10/2016. Since futures contract data are subjected to different expiration dates, consistent with the literature, continuous time series price data is constructed by rolling over the nearest to maturity contract to the second nearest to maturity contract when the time left to expiration date of the nearest to maturity contract is less than 5 trading days

(Koijen et al., 2013, Fuertes et al., 2015 and Fernandez-Perez et al., 2017*b*).

Data format is then organized in a matrix form with rows standing for time dimension daily observation and columns standing for different maturities. Roll over method is applied simultaneously for all maturities based contracts without generating any overlapping information. At the rolling date, when second nearest-to-maturity contract move to the first one, the third nearest-to-maturity contract automatically becomes the second one and this rolling continues to the last (longest) maturity contract. After the futures contracts roll-over, cross sectional number of contract is trimmed up to 20[38]. So, time series data of futures contract prices are formatted in a matrix way and this idea is consistent with recent petroleum futures term structure forecasting study by (Chantziara and Skiadopoulos, 2008).

Incentives for selecting crude oil are mainly due to (1) perfect term structure with constant time to maturity, each maturity difference is equal to 1 month and the number of contract each year is consistent with no break (2) crude oil is ”black gold” for many industries and countries and its dynamics on traded data is also crucial for market speculators and hedgers.

Futures basis, in this chapter, defined as the log price difference between two different time-to-maturity contracts with the same underlying at the same time. Consistent with formula in section E of (Routledge et al., 2000), futures basis calculation formula is represented as follows:

$$Basis_{t,\tau_j} = log\left(F_{t,\tau_{j+1}}/F_{t,\tau_j}\right) \tag{4.3.1}$$

where, t is the time dimension index, τ_j is maturity proxy with subscript j standing for month to expiration, j = 1, 2, 3, . . . , 19[39], $Basis_{t,\tau_j}$ is futures basis observation for at time t with maturity j.

At each time point, 19 discrete values from futures basis calculation are obtained. Given this

[38]Maturity over 20 introduces missing values at some time points, this study is trying to voiding interpolation for data manipulation.

[39]Futures basis results cross-sectional are ended with 19 months to maturity (columns) due to price maturity trimmed ata 20 months

well-structured data frame, Dynamic Nelson-Siegel (DNS therefore in the following content) model can be easily applied to futures basis term structure data (Diebold and Rudebusch, 2013). Introducing DNS model forecasting results as one of benchmark models is inspired by some recent commodity future term structure fitting studies, see (GrØnborg and Lunde (2016), Baruník and Malinska (2016) and Karstanje et al. (2017)).

4.3.2 Methodology

In this section, the general functional autoregressive model is presented in Hilbert and Banach spaces following the literature (Bosq, 2012):

$$f_{t+1} = \rho f_t + \varepsilon_{t+1} \tag{4.3.2}$$

where, f_{t+1} and f_t are functional curve observations at time $t+1$ and t with mean assumed to be zero, ε_{t+1} is a strong H-white noise, ρ is the functional linear operator with

$$\|\rho\| = \int \int \psi^2 (t,s)\, d_t d_s \tag{4.3.3}$$

where $\psi(t,s)$ is a bivariate kernel in order to make $\|\rho\| < 1$. All functions are assumed to be elements defined on the Hilbert space L^2 of real square integral functions on the interval [0,1] and inner products are satisfying $\langle h,g\rangle = \int h(t)g(t)d_t$.

For equation 4.3.2 to work properly, the key is about estimation of linear operator which transfers the current functional observation to the future ones. In this study, functional linear operator estimation is following recent functional auto-regression predictive factors model (PF therefore in the following contents) developed by Kargin and Onatski (2008). Different from the standard approach, functional principal component analysis (reducing data dimension and exploring the main functional components explaining data variation), the PF method estimate linear operator by selecting those factors that can minimize the mean squared forecasted error.

Given the purpose of minimization $E\|f_{t+1} - \rho f_t\|$, forecasting functional observation under functional predictive model is presented:

$$\hat{f}_{t+1} = \sum_{i=1}^{k} \langle f_t, \hat{b}_{\alpha,i} \rangle \hat{C}_1 \left(\hat{b}_{\alpha,i} \right) \tag{4.3.4}$$

where,

$$\hat{b}_{\alpha,i} = \sum_{j=1}^{p} \hat{\lambda}_j^{-1/2} \langle \hat{x}_{\alpha,i}, \hat{v}_j \rangle \hat{v}_j + \alpha \hat{x}_{\alpha,i} \tag{4.3.5}$$

$\hat{x}_{\alpha,i}$ is a linear combinations of empirical functional principal components (EFPCs), denoted as $\hat{v}_j$, $\hat{\lambda}_j$ is the empirical eigenvalue corresponding to EFPCs in deceasing order ($\lambda_1 > \lambda_2 > \cdots > \lambda_p$), $\hat{C}_1$ is the empirical data covariance operator with lag 1, α and k are two control parameters to be fixed before the forecasting procedure, which is computed from the in-sample training data via the cross-validation process with fold equal to 10. The predictive factor method is supposed to outperform other methods as long as the model parameters (α and k) are well specified somehow, see Didericksen et al. (2012) and Horváth and Kokoszka (2012).

Other functional candidate models for comparison are listed in the following: functional principal component based kernel estimation method (EK therefore in the following content) by Bosq (2012) and Besse et al. (2000),

$$\hat{f}_{t+1} = \sum_{k=1}^{p} \left(\sum_{l=1}^{p} \hat{\psi}_{k,l} \langle f_t, \hat{v}_l \rangle \right) \hat{v}_k(t) \tag{4.3.6}$$

where

$$\hat{\psi}_{k,l} = \hat{\lambda}_i^{-1} (N-1) \sum_{n=1}^{N-1} \langle f_{t+1}, \hat{v}_j \rangle \langle f_t, \hat{v}_i \rangle \tag{4.3.7}$$

functional naive approach (Naive therefore in the following content) which simply uses the last period functional observation as the predicted value

$$\hat{f}_{t+1} = f_t \tag{4.3.8}$$

and functional random walk (RW therefore in the following content) which uses the last period functional observation plus a random H-White noise as an approximation inspired by the empirical functional models' forecasting comparison study from Didericksen et al. (2012).

$$\hat{f}_{t+1} = f_t + \varepsilon_{t+1} \tag{4.3.9}$$

Apart from functional method family, motivated by recent commodity futures price term structure fitting and forecasting studies (Baruník and Malinska, 2016, GrØnborg and Lunde, 2016 and Karstanje et al., 2017), non-functional forecasting method Dynamic Nelson-Siegel model (three latent factors are assumed to be vector autoregressive process with lag 1) by Diebold and Rudebusch (2013) is considered in this chapter for completeness.

$$f_{t+1} = L_{t+1} + S_{t+1}\left(\frac{1-e^{-\lambda\tau}}{\lambda\tau}\right) + C_{t+1}\left(\frac{1-e^{-\lambda\tau}}{\lambda\tau} - e^{-\lambda\tau}\right) + \varepsilon_t(\tau) \tag{4.3.10}$$

where, τ is an index vector for maturities, L_{t+1} is the estimated first latent factor with observed factor is constant term which does not depends on the time, S_{t+1} is the estimated second factor with observed model factor $\left(\frac{1-e^{-\lambda\tau}}{\lambda\tau}\right)$ in the DNS model focusing on the fitting of short time contract variation, C_{t+1} is the estimated third factor with factor loading $\left(\frac{1-e^{-\lambda\tau}}{\lambda\tau} - e^{-\lambda\tau}\right)$ measuring the middle term of contract data variation. λ is a decaying parameter controlling the shape of observed model factor, which is optimized before out-of-sample forecasting procedure. Dynamics of three latent factors are assumed to be vector autoregressive process with lag 1,

$$\left\{\begin{array}{c} L_{t+1}, \\ \\ S_{t+1}, \\ \\ C_{t+1}, \end{array}\right\} = \left\{\begin{array}{c} \alpha_1 + \beta_1 L_t + \xi_{1,t+1}, \\ \\ \alpha_2 + \beta_2 S_t + \xi_{2,t+1}, \\ \\ \alpha_3 + \beta_3 C_t + \xi_{3,t+1}, \end{array}\right\}$$

where, α_1, α_2 and α_3 are intercept values, β_1, β_2 and β_3 are estimated from the in-sample training sample data and continued updated when new data observation becomes available. $\xi_{1,t+1}, \xi_{2,t+1}$ and $\xi_{3,t+1}$ are error terms. Although the first latent factor is often modelled as a first order difference stationary process, all factors in this study are stationary on levels which is mainly due to the stationary property on the futures basis.

Following the standard forecasting performance comparison, both overall and individual time point level due to functional data format. For overall forecasting error comparison, calculations are referred to functional root mean square error (FRMSE), functional mean absolute error (FMAE), functional Theil inequality coefficient (FTIC). For individual time level, mean square error (MSE) and mean absolute error (MAE) are used following Kargin and Onatski (2008), Chantziara and Skiadopoulos (2008) and Didericksen et al. (2012).

$$FRMSE = \sqrt{\frac{1}{N}\sum_{t=1}^{N}\left(\int_0^1 \left(f_t(x) - \hat{f}_t(x)\right)^2 dx\right)} \tag{4.3.11}$$

$$FMAE = \frac{1}{N}\sum_{t=1}^{N}\left(\int_0^1 \left|f_t(x) - \hat{f}_t(x)\right| dx\right) \tag{4.3.12}$$

$$FTIC = \frac{FRMSE}{\sqrt{\frac{1}{N}\sum_{t=1}^{N}\left(\int_0^1 f_t(x)^2 dx\right)} + \sqrt{\frac{1}{N}\sum_{t=1}^{N}\left(\int_0^1 \hat{f}_t(x)^2 dx\right)}} \tag{4.3.13}$$

$$MSE_t = \sqrt{\int_0^1 \left(f_t(x) - \hat{f}_t(x)\right)^2 dx} \tag{4.3.14}$$

$$MAE = \left(\int_0^1 \left|f_t(x) - \hat{f}_t(x)\right| dx\right) \tag{4.3.15}$$

where, $f_t(x)$ and $\hat{f}_t(x)$ are the real and estimated curve observation respectively, N is the number of observation in out-of-sample.

To access the out-of-sample forecasting performance statistically, the Model Confidence Set method (MCS therefore in the following contents, (Hansen et al., 2011)) is applied in this chapter. Regarding the degree of flexibility, MCS method has taken the great advantages as its interface framework can allow not only the out-of-sample forecasting error comparison but also permit more general comparison between two objectives as long as the loss function is well specified. Generally, MCS is performed via a sequential testing procedure on forecasting equivalence checking, model elimination criterion and continuing updating algorithm. Statistical test under the null hypothesis is carried out among two different models as follows:

$$H_0 : E\left(d_{ij,t}\right) = 0, \text{ for all i, j} \in M$$

where $M \subset M^0$, M^0 is the candidate model set specified before test, $d_{ij,t}$ is the loss function differential between model i and model j at time t. MCS test will stop when null hypothesis is not able to be rejected, indicating two models in this set are measured as the same performance given pre-determined loss function. The final superior models set is defined as:

$$M^* = \{i \in M^0 : E\left(d_{ij,t}\right) \leq 0 \text{ for all j} \in M^0\}$$

In this chapter, statistical test based on MCS method is conducted via different settings with controlling effects from window lengths selection and loss functions formation. Results are shown in following sections.

4.4 Empirical Analysis

All empirical data analysis results are summarized in this section from different perspectives. In terms of forecasting error, FRMSE, FMAE, FTI and MSE are reported to measure the forecasted value distance against the observed real value. To investigate the forecasted futures basis term structure shape variation in the out-of-sample period, shape analysis is then decomposed by (1) the time series sign matching on the level of individual time-to-maturity (whether the sign of forecasted futures basis is the same as the real observed one at time t for each maturity contract), (2) the cross-sectional first order difference sign shape matching over time (whether backwardation or contango continues over time)[40].

Apart from those forecasting error aspects, economic meanings behind forecasting is analysed via making trading investment on underlying assets given known forecasted futures basis. Borrowing the time series futures basis factor studies from the literature, trading strategy decision is following backwardation theory idea (Fuertes et al., 2015). Similar to their ideas, the nearest time-to-maturity contract price within each futures basis calculation pair is regarded as the spot price approximation. When futures basis is positive (negative), referred to market scenario of contango (backwardation), trading strategy is implemented via selling (buying) the nearest-to-maturity future contract. Under the functional forecasting framework, economic exploration results are explored by repeating above idea on each contract pairs constructed futures basis.

Concerning about whether forecasting suggested by these models are statistically different, the MCS method (Hansen et al., 2011) is used to select the superior model set regarding model forecasting performance for which this chapter considers both forecasting error and economic meanings under different loss functions and parameters.

[40]For details on specific application, please refer to the section: Term Structure Shape Preserving

In the end, a new trading application and discussion on how to use forecasted futures basis from the view of practical implementation in financial market is proposed. Application is considered on futures contracts only without inclusion any information from spot market, but this can be easily adjusted.

4.4.1 Futures Basis Term Structure Summary Statistics

To give a general view about how input data are being organized, summary statistics for futures basis in terms of different maturities are reported in this part see table 4.1. According to the maturity based mean value, crude oil shows non-consistent pattern across maturities. Specifically, in table 4.1, starting from the third row, mean value is negative and continues to be negative afterwards.

Stylized fact on volatility is observed in table 4.1: a decreasing trend from the short maturity contract to the long maturity contract which is consistent with the Samuelson effect (Samuelson, 1965) as short-term maturity contract price is more volatile than long term maturity contract due to high volume of market participation in the short term one.

From the distribution moments' calculation, futures basis has a wide range on short maturity contract compared with long maturity contract, large value on kurtosis (fail tail evidence). Skewness does generally not vary too much, with almost negative values.

4.4.2 Forecasting Performance Comparison

Before comparing the final results among models, a specific forecasting principal needs to be determined to initialize the following procedure.

Firstly, for all functional models, discrete data is smoothed by 99 Fourier Basis functions to construct curve data. New data is then demeaned to make sure that zero mean assumption is satisfied

Table 4.1: Summary Statistics of Future Basis Term Structure on Individual Maturity Level

	Obs	**Mean**	**SD**	**Median**	**Min**	**Max**	**Skew**	**Kurtosis**	**SE**
Maturity.1	6716	0.00162	0.01904	0.00319	-0.10562	0.16695	0.37114	5.82425	0.00023
Maturity.2	6716	0.00003	0.01483	0.00157	-0.07796	0.07876	-0.10856	1.51314	0.00018
Maturity.3	6716	-0.00079	0.01251	0.00050	-0.05407	0.04606	-0.13445	0.36260	0.00015
Maturity.4	6716	-0.00126	0.01119	0.00000	-0.13186	0.03351	-0.45048	2.88719	0.00014
Maturity.5	6716	-0.00148	0.00992	-0.00051	-0.03357	0.09556	-0.05218	1.49132	0.00012
Maturity.6	6716	-0.00169	0.00880	-0.00082	-0.03382	0.02360	-0.24168	-0.14454	0.00011
Maturity.7	6716	-0.00181	0.00805	-0.00104	-0.03039	0.03169	-0.20377	-0.17787	0.00010
Maturity.8	6716	-0.00176	0.00744	-0.00128	-0.04111	0.02066	-0.17790	-0.03924	0.00009
Maturity.9	6716	-0.00166	0.00700	-0.00129	-0.05033	0.01982	-0.17360	0.21521	0.00009
Maturity.10	6716	-0.00159	0.00655	-0.00117	-0.02337	0.02662	-0.12691	0.08033	0.00008
Maturity.11	6716	-0.00157	0.00617	-0.00110	-0.03234	0.04677	-0.05090	0.82453	0.00008
Maturity.12	6716	-0.00148	0.00583	-0.00110	-0.05474	0.03457	-0.21324	2.15106	0.00007
Maturity.13	6716	-0.00142	0.00541	-0.00105	-0.04267	0.02193	-0.15510	0.78585	0.00007
Maturity.14	6716	-0.00129	0.00508	-0.00102	-0.03051	0.02822	-0.08072	0.76535	0.00006
Maturity.15	6716	-0.00120	0.00480	-0.00082	-0.05774	0.02827	-0.37205	3.53935	0.00006
Maturity.16	6716	-0.00105	0.00458	-0.00056	-0.04049	0.03596	0.12955	2.47980	0.00006
Maturity.17	6716	-0.00085	0.00461	-0.00056	-0.02643	0.03549	0.32144	2.08605	0.00006
Maturity.18	6716	-0.00051	0.00497	-0.00053	-0.03216	0.03091	0.55926	2.67244	0.00006
Maturity.19	6716	-0.00018	0.00535	-0.00050	-0.05483	0.04464	0.79109	6.72323	0.00007

Summary statistics of empirical crude oil future basis term structure within whole sample period (30/01/1991 to 03/11/2016) is reported here with the first column standing for maturity date measured in month, from 1 month to maturity up to 19 months to maturity. From the second column afterwards, on the first row, data statistics are listed as: Obs. (number of observation on each time index on out-of-sample period, daily frequency), Mean (average value across all observations), SD (standard deviation), Median (median), Min (minimum), Max (maximum), Skew (third moment of sample series), Kurtosis (fourth moment of sample series), SE (standard error).

within sample period. Given demeaned functional curve data, forecasting procedure is applied. In the end, in-sample curve mean is added back to obtain the final forecasted curve data.

Before the forecasting process, optimized parameters from the cross-validation optimization in the initial training sample need to be settled (specifically, α and k for functional predictive factors, number of empirical principal components for functional estimated kernel method and λ value for Dynamic Nelson-Siegel method).

During the functional forecasting procedure, forecasting rules need to be determined. Four types of forecasting rules are proposed here: (1) standard in-sample forecasting test (2) use 70% of whole sample as in-sample training data and continue forecasting last 30% sample data without linear operator and mean curve re-calculation (3) given initial in-sample data, mean and coefficient are re-calculated when one new observation becomes available, at the same time, in-sample training data is expanded with new observation adding (4) given the initial in-sample training data, rolling window length fixed for 500, mean curve and linear operator are re-calculated at each fixed window data. To distinguish the best forecasting rule, functional root mean square error and functional R^2 are used as criterion.

Determination of forecasting rule is then operated by testing these four ideas in different subsample data. Results for forecasting error and goodness of fit are reported in table 4.2.

Regardless of values of two parameters, FRMSE indicates the best choice is $Rolling$ method with the lowest forecasting error recorded across different samples. $70/30$, also known as the naive forecasting approach, performs the worst under all cases. With consideration on $PredictiveFactors$ and value $PenalizedParameters$, using out-of-sample forecasting method does not vary too much. By conclusion, $Rolling$ is the best candidate for out later forecasting rule reference.

Given rolling window forecasting type and optimized parameters from in-sample training data,

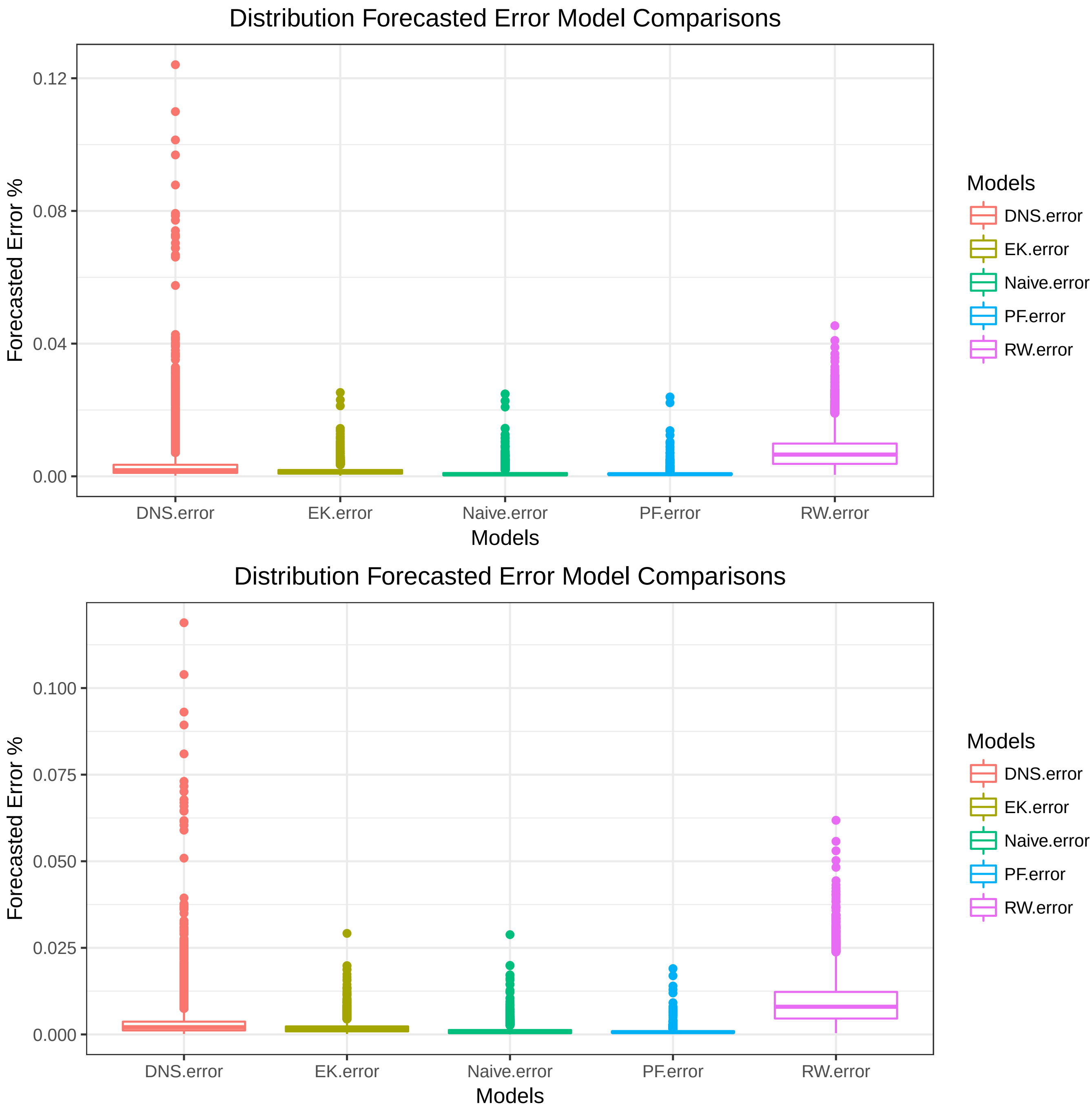
Table 4.2: Subsample Forecasting Principals Comparisons

	FRMSE	**Predictive Factors**	**Penalized Parameters**
		Panel A:1989-1999	
In-sample	0.01153	9	0.001
70/30	0.04503	1	0.001
Expanding	0.00876	7	0.01
Rolling	0.00011	9	0.0109
		Panel B: 1992-1999	
In-sample	0.00715	6	0.001
70/30	0.04213	2	0.001
Expanding	0.0062	7	0.001
Rolling	0.00739	8	0.007
		Panel C: 2002-2006	
In-sample	0.00504	4	0.005
70/30	0.04441	1	0.001
Expanding	0.00433	4	0.002
Rolling	0.0043	4	0.001
		Panel D: 2002 - 2010	
In-sample	0.00571	4	0.004
70/30	0.04782	2	0.001
Expanding	0.0071	4	0.003
Rolling	0.00562	4	0.009
		Panel E: 2010 - 2014	
In-sample	0.0026	3	0.003
70/30	0.0315	2	0.001
Expanding	0.00251	3	0.002
Rolling	0.00251	3	0.002

Note: This table reports forecasting error comparison for four different forecasting principals across different sum-samples. Two important parameters are validated when different forecasting principals are applied. The first column is forecasting principals: $In-sample$ using all sample data for estimation and in-sample forecasting method, 70/30 70% training for parameter estimation and continue forecasting 30% out-of-sample method; $Expanding$ 70% training sample and continue re-estimating parameters as new observed data available and forecasting left 30% out-of-sample data; $Rolling$ fixed 500 observation to initialize parameter estimation and rolling forward with new parameter estimation and forecasting. From the second column to the last, it reports forecasting principals' corresponding $FRMSE$ (functional root means square error), $PredictiveFactors$ (number of predictive factors used in forecasting method), $PenalizedParameters$ (parameter α in equation 4.3.4 and 4.3.5).

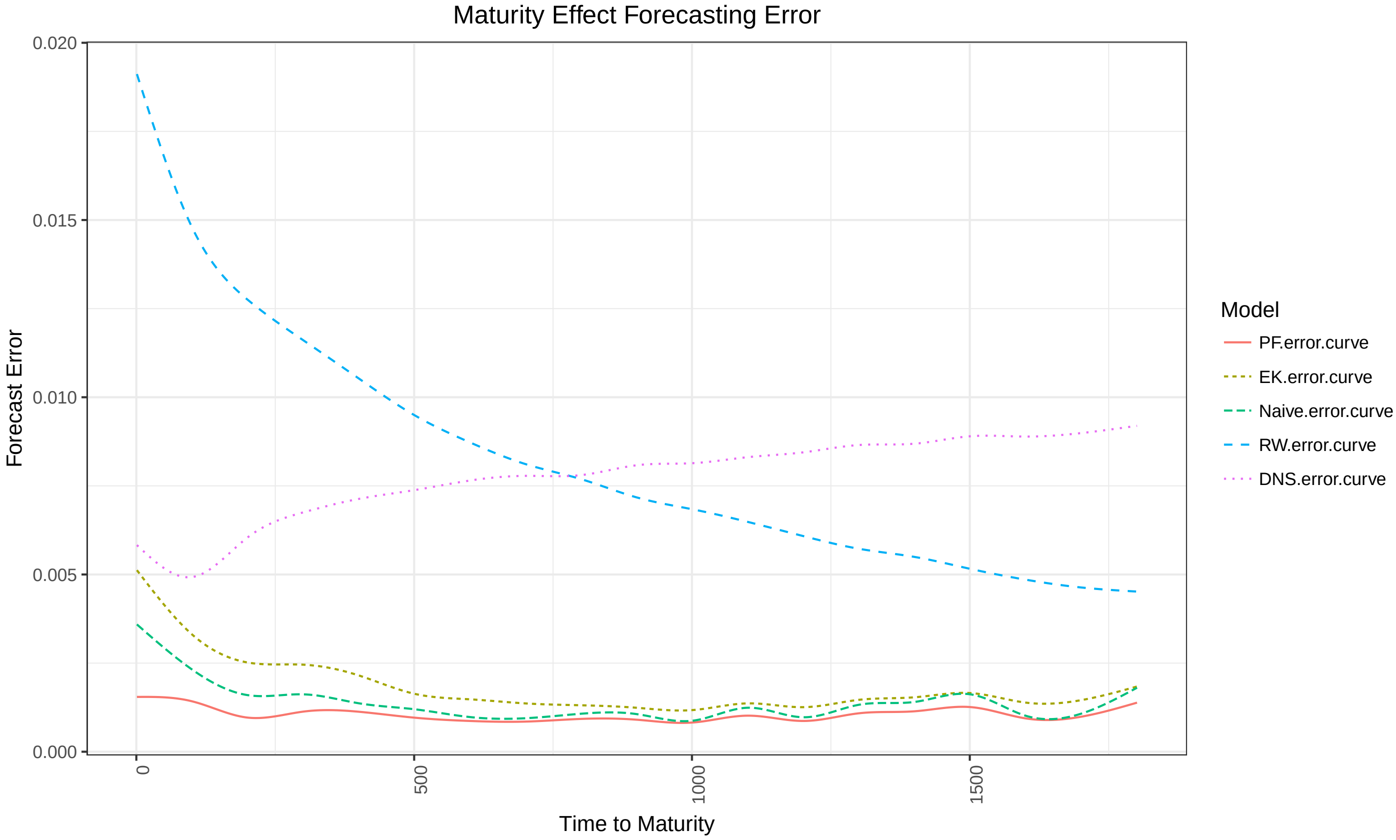
forecasting procedure is completed for all models. Forecasting error distribution is shown via boxplot in figure 4.1 and average forecasting error on maturity level is in figure 4.2.

Figure 4.1: Boxplot of Forecasting Error



Note: Boxplot of forecast error based on Mean Square Error (MSE) under all models (Functional Predictive Factors (PF), Functional Estimated Kernel (EK), Functional Naive Model (Naive), Functional Random Walk (RW) and Dynamic Nelson-Siegel (DNS)) are reported here for crude oil market within out-of-sample period, 1999/01/01 to 2016/12/31, daily frequency with 1 day forecasting procedure. Two different maturity lengths are considered with 18-month time-to-maturity on the top panel and 10-month time-to-maturity on the bottom panel.

Figure 4.2: Maturity based Forecasting Error



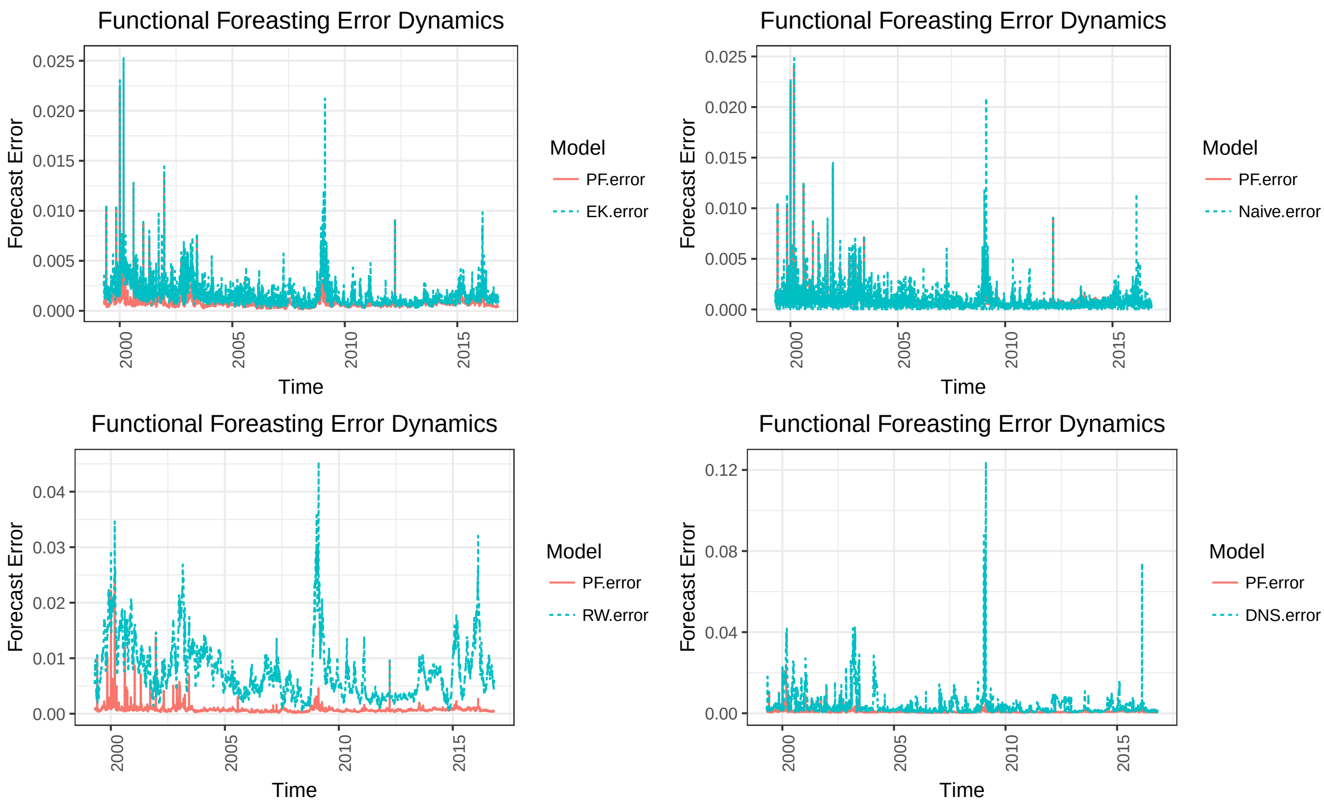
Note: this figure plots the forecasting error in terms of maturity level for all models (Functional Predictive Factors (PF), Functional Estimated Kernel (EK), Functional Naive Model (Naive), Functional Random Walk (RW) and Dynamic Nelson-Siegel (DNS)) across out-of-sample period from 01/01/1999 to 31/12/2016, daily frequency with 1 day forecasting horizon. Forecasting error is calculated based on Function Root Mean Square Error Method (FRMSE) described in methodology part. Results are shown with X-Axis standing for smoothed (100 points for one month interval) maturity level and Y-Axis standing for FRMSE level.

From figure 4.1, forecasting error distribution for each model are illustrated in 19 months full term structure idea and first 10 months term structure idea in upper panel and lower panel separately. Conclusion is that PF method has slightly more accurate forecasting performance (less forecasting error) compared with EK method. DNS and RW method are in the worst group, while Naive falls in the middle. Results are also consistent from figure 4.2 in which PF method has the lowest forecasting error in both short and long time maturity and overlaps with EK method in the middle-term.

4.4.3 Dynamics of Forecasting Errors

To track the forecasting performance along out-of-sample period, forecasting error on each time observation is calculated via MSE, yielding a time series forecasting error. This procedure is applied on all candidate models and plotted to show forecasting performance across time. One interest is to show how models forecasting performance behaves under certain extreme market situation, especially during financial crisis period. Outperforming model is supposed to be able to control forecasting error in this scenario. This argument is from the perspective that model should has ability to adjust linear operator correspond.

Figure 4.3: Forecasting Error Dynamics



Note: this figure plots the forecasting error dynamics for all models (Functional Predictive Factors (PF), Functional Estimated Kernel (EK), Functional Naive Model (Naive), Functional Random Walk (RW) and Dynamic Nelson-Siegel (DNS)) across out-of-sample period from 1999/01/01 to 2016/12/31, daily frequency with 1 day forecasting horizon. Forecasting error is calculated based on Mean Square Error (MSE) described in methodology part. PF is selected and plotted in four panels to show dynamic comparison with other four models in a pairwise way.

Forecasting error dynamics are plotted in figure 4.3, where pair-wise comparison approach is adopted to show relative performance with PF method (red line) against other candidate models (blue line). Overall, PF method has small variation on forecasting error dynamics across whole out-of-sample period compared with other models. PF method is also well behaved as it is supposed to be when market experiences extreme fluctuation, evidenced by lowest forecasting error across all models in earlier 2000 and recent sub-prime crisis 2008. DNS, non-functional method, marked as the worst candidate (nearly along whole out-of-sample period), peaks over 0.12 forecasting error at 2008.

4.4.4 Term Structure Shape Preserving

Forecasting futures basis term structure shape is investigated from both time-series and cross-sectional level spanning the whole out-of-sample period. On the time-series dimension, sign is matched between forecasted and real futures basis, showing whether forecasting methods preserve sign shape for single maturity based contract over time.

From table 4.3, PF, EK and Naive have consistent individual sign preserving ability across the whole out-of-sample period. High percentage value is observed for DNS model at the short time-to-maturity but falls when maturity goes longer. RW is never on the comparable case as it falls into the worst case in both short and long maturity. During the recent financial crisis period, PF outperforms nearly in call maturity cases.

On another dimension, for each curve observation, first order difference is calculated for both forecasted and real curve data. Sign matching is then conducted between these two first order differenced curve data on each time point. If all maturities' signs of first order difference curve are matched, then a value is marked at this time point (specifically, 1 for all matching on 19-month time-to-maturity contracts (*TS 1-19*), 2 for matching on the first 9-month time-to-maturity contracts (*TS 1-9*) and 3 for matching on the last 10-month time-to-maturity contracts (*TS 10-19*)) as success of curve shape

Table 4.3: Futures Basis Term Structure Shape Preserving on Time Series Dimension

Panel A: Whole Out-of-Sample Period

	Maturity.1	Maturity.2	Maturity.3	Maturity.4	Maturity.5	Maturity.6	Maturity.7	Maturity.8	Maturity.9	Maturity.10
PF	0.98	0.98	0.99	0.99	0.98	0.98	0.98	0.97	0.98	0.99
EK	0.94	0.96	0.98	0.97	0.97	0.96	0.96	0.96	0.97	0.97
Naive	0.97	0.98	0.99	0.98	0.98	0.98	0.98	0.98	0.98	0.98
RW	0.87	0.85	0.85	0.83	0.82	0.81	0.79	0.77	0.77	0.77
DNS	0.94	0.97	0.97	0.97	0.97	0.96	0.96	0.95	0.94	0.94

	Maturity.11	Maturity.12	Maturity.13	Maturity.14	Maturity.15	Maturity.16	Maturity.17	Maturity.18	Maturity.19
PF	0.98	0.98	0.98	0.98	0.97	0.97	0.96	0.96	0.95
EK	0.96	0.96	0.96	0.96	0.95	0.95	0.94	0.94	0.93
Naive	0.98	0.98	0.98	0.98	0.98	0.98	0.98	0.98	0.97
RW	0.76	0.75	0.74	0.75	0.72	0.72	0.70	0.69	0.69
DNS	0.93	0.93	0.93	0.92	0.93	0.93	0.92	0.91	0.90

Panel B: Financial Crisis Period

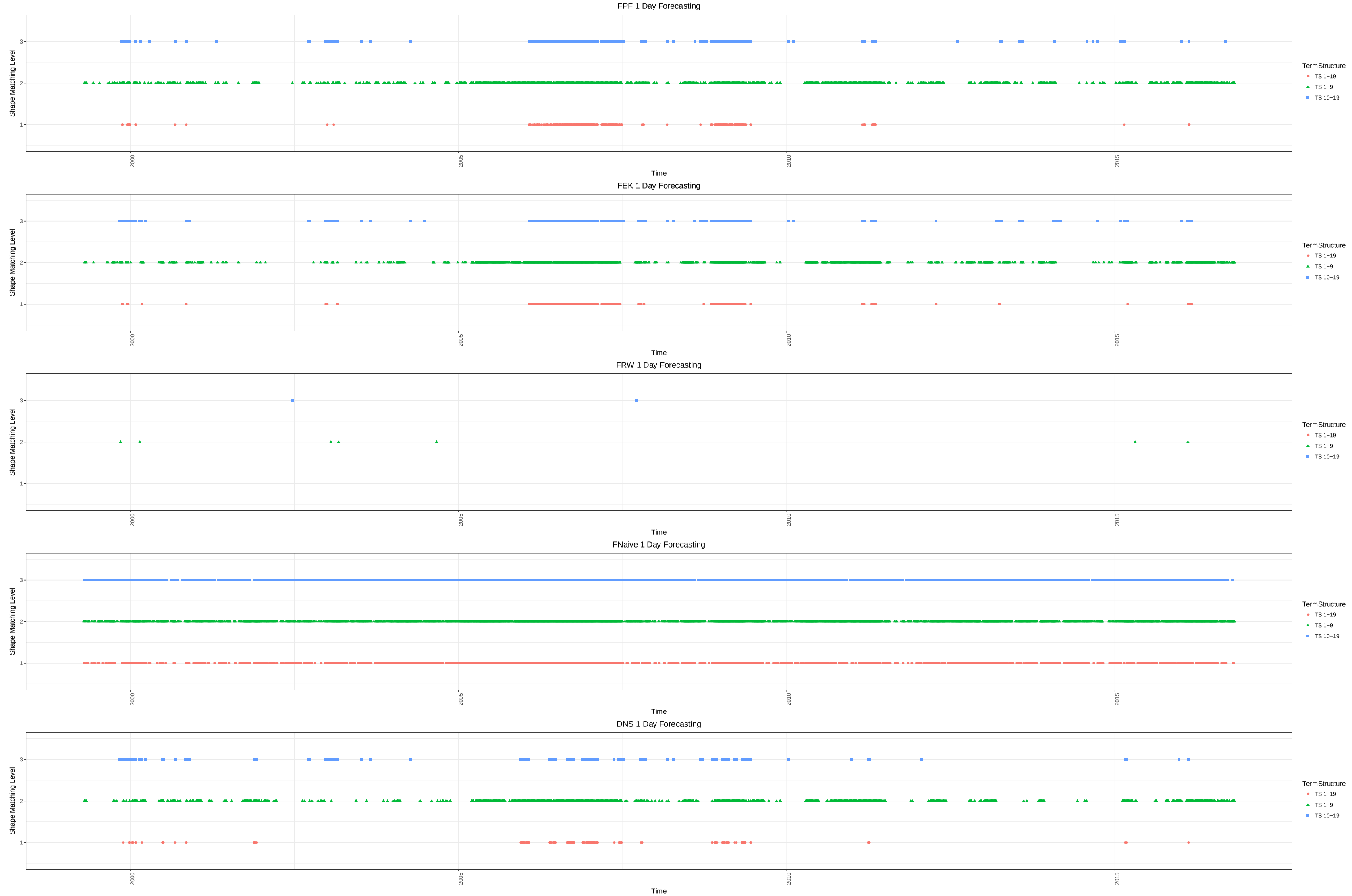
	Maturity.1	Maturity.2	Maturity.3	Maturity.4	Maturity.5	Maturity.6	Maturity.7	Maturity.8	Maturity.9	Maturity.10
PF	0.99	0.97	0.95	0.97	0.99	0.96	0.93	0.95	0.97	0.98
EK	0.95	0.90	0.92	0.92	0.93	0.93	0.87	0.89	0.95	0.96
Naive	0.96	0.94	0.95	0.93	0.94	0.94	0.93	0.97	0.99	0.99
RW	0.81	0.74	0.76	0.72	0.70	0.77	0.73	0.77	0.68	0.68
DNS	0.96	0.92	0.85	0.81	0.82	0.80	0.77	0.83	0.87	0.88

	Maturity.11	Maturity.12	Maturity.13	Maturity.14	Maturity.15	Maturity.16	Maturity.17	Maturity.18	Maturity.19
PF	0.98	0.96	0.98	1.00	1.00	0.99	0.97	0.93	0.91
EK	0.98	0.97	0.99	0.98	0.98	0.97	0.97	0.96	0.94
Naive	0.97	0.96	0.98	0.99	0.99	0.99	0.99	0.97	0.96
RW	0.74	0.69	0.68	0.66	0.66	0.73	0.60	0.65	0.64
DNS	0.86	0.83	0.85	0.87	0.87	0.87	0.87	0.85	0.84

Note: time series futures basis shape matching is conducted for both whole out-of-sample (from 16/04/1999 to 27/10/2016) and financial crisis period (from 30/05/2008 to 30/12/2008) in daily frequency. Maturity is measured from 1-month up to 19-month to expiration. Measurement behind this idea is to matching the sign on each maturity forecasted values against the realised observations in individually. Then count 1 when matching is achieved and 0 otherwise and sum all counts over total number of days in two different sample periods. Procedure are repeated for all candidate models (PF, EK, RW, Naive and DNS).

preservation. This procedure is repeated for all time points and functional models' forecasting values. Their dynamics for the interests of behaviour is plotted for demonstration.

Figure 4.4: Forecasting Term Structure Shape Preserving Dynamics



Note: based on 1 day head forecasting futures basis from all models, this figure plots the number of shape preserving times across out-of-sample period, from 16/04/1999 to 27/10/2016. Shape preserving idea is to match the term structure curve from forecasted futures basis against realised one. Upward (downward) sloping is marked as contango (backwardation) market. To count the times of same curve matching, all futures basis are taken first order difference across all maturities at each daily observation. Then mark 1 when model forecasted futures basis are equal to realised futures basis on every maturity point in terms of sign, otherwise, mark 0. This tables considers three curves matching with different maturity lengths, whole curve (TS 1-19), first 9 months (TS 1-9) and last 10 months (TS 10-19). To avoid overlapping, value 1 is for matching in TS 1-19, 2 for matching in TS 1-9 and 3 for matching in TS 10-19.

If a perfect model is recorded, 4575 will be the upper boundary to be observed, meaning forecasting futures basis are exactly matched to realised futures basis at each time point. From figure 4.4, it is apparent to see that Naive model is the best on shape preserving across different scenarios. Taken Naive approach formation into account, this implies that crude oil futures' shape are generally depended on last structure shape, with total matching days 1627, 2902 and 2362 for (*TS 1-19*, *TS 1-9* and *TS 10-19*) respectively. PF and EK have similar results around 500 days matching for TS 1-19 and TS 10-19, while PF dominates other models for TS 1-9 at 1960 days. Observing matching counts across time, PF has relatively better results in recent financial crisis.

4.4.5 Forecasting Economic Scale

Economic scale exploration is explained by applying trading strategies on futures contracts. The fundamental idea of trading strategy is following future market backwardation and contango theory ((Litzenberger and Rabinowitz, 1995) and (Fernandez-Perez et al., 2017*b*)). According to futures basis calculation in this chapter, positive (negative) futures basis implies market contango (backwardation). Trading strategy is applied with shorting (longing) future contract correspondingly.

For completeness, under backwardation theory framework, spot price is approximated by future contract with nearest-to-maturity within each futures basis calculation pair and return is calculation based on logarithm form with position fully collateralized via nearest-to-maturity contract closing price. Single contract long and short investing principals is as follows:

$$\left\{ \begin{array}{llll} if & \hat{Basis}_{t+1,\tau_j} > 0, & weight = -1, & Return_{t+1,\tau_j} = log\left(F_{t+1,\tau_j-1}/F_{t,\tau_j}\right) * weight \\ if & \hat{Basis}_{t+1,\tau_j} < 0, & weight = 1, & Return_{t+1,\tau_j} = log\left(F_{t+1,\tau_j-1}/F_{t,\tau_j}\right) * weight, \end{array} \right\}$$

where, $j = 1, 2, 3, ..., 19$, portfolio performance is described by: (1) trading strategy return data series first four moments with mean and volatility annualized by trading length, (2) Sharpe ratio, sortino ratio and omega sharpe ratio for strategy's risk adjusted compensation, (3) Cornish-Fisher VaR (Value-at-Risk) and maximum drawdown measure strategy's potential risk and loss. Results of portfolio performance is reported in table 4.4 and cumulative portfolio performance under different maturities level is shown in figure 4.5 below:

Figure 4.5: Strategy Performance based on Backwardation Theory for All Maturities

Note: this figure plots the forecasting error in terms of maturity level for all models (Functional Predictive Factors (PF), Functional Estimated Kernel (EK), Functional Naive Model (Naive), Functional Random Walk (RW) and Dynamic Nelson-Siegel (DNS)) across out-of-sample period from 01/01/1999 to 31/12/2016, daily frequency with 1 day forecasting horizon. Forecasting error is calculated based on Function Root Mean Square Error Method (FRMSE) described in methodology part. Results are shown with X-Axis standing for smoothed maturity level and Y-Axis standing for FRMSE level.

Table 4.4: Performance of Backwardation Strategy on Individual Maturity Level

	Maturity.1	Maturity.2	Maturity.3	Maturity.4	Maturity.5	Maturity.6	Maturity.7	Maturity.8	Maturity.9	Maturity.10	Maturity.11	Maturity.12	Maturity.13	Maturity.14	Maturity.15	Maturity.16	Maturity.17	Maturity.18	Maturity.19
Panel A: Simple Holding Return																			
Mean	0.06	0.06	0.06	0.06	0.06	0.06	0.06	0.06	0.07	0.07	0.07	0.07	0.07	0.07	0.07	0.07	0.07	0.07	0.07
StDev	0.37	0.34	0.33	0.31	0.31	0.30	0.29	0.28	0.28	0.27	0.27	0.26	0.26	0.26	0.25	0.25	0.25	0.24	0.24
Sharp ratio	0.16	0.17	0.19	0.20	0.21	0.21	0.22	0.23	0.24	0.24	0.25	0.25	0.26	0.26	0.27	0.27	0.27	0.28	0.28
SortinoRatio 0%	0.01	0.02	0.02	0.02	0.02	0.02	0.02	0.02	0.02	0.02	0.02	0.02	0.02	0.02	0.02	0.02	0.02	0.02	0.02
OmegaRatio	0.03	0.03	0.03	0.04	0.04	0.04	0.04	0.04	0.04	0.04	0.04	0.05	0.05	0.05	0.05	0.05	0.05	0.05	0.05
99% VaR(Cornish-Fisher)	-0.08	-0.07	-0.07	-0.06	-0.06	-0.06	-0.06	-0.06	-0.06	-0.05	-0.05	-0.05	-0.05	-0.05	-0.05	-0.05	-0.05	-0.05	-0.05
maxDrawdown	0.90	0.88	0.87	0.86	0.85	0.85	0.84	0.84	0.84	0.83	0.83	0.82	0.82	0.81	0.81	0.81	0.81	0.80	0.80
% of positive months	0.49	0.49	0.49	0.50	0.50	0.50	0.50	0.50	0.50	0.50	0.50	0.50	0.50	0.50	0.50	0.50	0.50	0.50	0.50
Panel B: PF Implied Strategy Return																			
Mean	0.13	0.18	0.18	0.18	0.18	0.17	0.16	0.14	0.15	0.15	0.18	0.16	0.17	0.18	0.18	0.16	0.17	0.17	0.18
StDev	0.37	0.34	0.33	0.31	0.31	0.30	0.29	0.28	0.28	0.27	0.27	0.26	0.26	0.26	0.25	0.25	0.25	0.24	0.24
Sharp ratio	0.37	0.52	0.55	0.58	0.60	0.58	0.54	0.51	0.53	0.56	0.67	0.63	0.66	0.69	0.70	0.65	0.70	0.70	0.73
SortinoRatio 0%	0.03	0.05	0.05	0.05	0.06	0.05	0.05	0.05	0.05	0.05	0.06	0.06	0.06	0.06	0.06	0.06	0.06	0.06	0.07
OmegaRatio	0.07	0.10	0.10	0.11	0.11	0.11	0.10	0.09	0.10	0.10	0.13	0.12	0.12	0.13	0.13	0.12	0.13	0.13	0.14
99% VaR(Cornish-Fisher)	-0.08	-0.07	-0.07	-0.07	-0.06	-0.06	-0.06	-0.06	-0.06	-0.06	-0.05	-0.05	-0.05	-0.05	-0.05	-0.05	-0.05	-0.05	-0.05
maxDrawdown	0.75	0.72	0.70	0.69	0.68	0.63	0.62	0.61	0.61	0.59	0.56	0.52	0.51	0.50	0.50	0.50	0.50	0.48	0.48
% of positive months	0.49	0.49	0.49	0.49	0.49	0.50	0.50	0.50	0.50	0.50	0.50	0.50	0.50	0.50	0.50	0.50	0.50	0.50	0.50
Panel C: EK Implied Strategy Return																			
Mean	-0.02	0.03	0.10	0.11	0.08	0.08	0.06	0.08	0.08	0.09	0.12	0.13	0.12	0.13	0.13	0.15	0.11	0.13	0.12
StDev	0.37	0.34	0.33	0.31	0.31	0.30	0.29	0.28	0.28	0.27	0.27	0.26	0.26	0.26	0.25	0.25	0.25	0.24	0.24
Sharp ratio	-0.07	0.09	0.32	0.35	0.25	0.27	0.19	0.28	0.29	0.33	0.44	0.48	0.44	0.50	0.50	0.58	0.47	0.55	0.48
SortinoRatio 0%	-0.01	0.01	0.03	0.03	0.02	0.02	0.02	0.02	0.03	0.03	0.04	0.04	0.04	0.05	0.05	0.05	0.04	0.05	0.04
OmegaRatio	-0.01	0.02	0.06	0.06	0.04	0.05	0.03	0.05	0.05	0.06	0.08	0.09	0.08	0.09	0.09	0.11	0.09	0.10	0.09
99% VaR(Cornish-Fisher)	-0.08	-0.07	-0.07	-0.06	-0.06	-0.06	-0.06	-0.06	-0.06	-0.05	-0.05	-0.05	-0.05	-0.05	-0.05	-0.05	-0.05	-0.05	-0.05
maxDrawdown	0.86	0.74	0.70	0.69	0.72	0.78	0.74	0.75	0.78	0.74	0.67	0.64	0.61	0.55	0.55	0.49	0.55	0.48	0.47
% of positive months	0.47	0.48	0.49	0.49	0.49	0.49	0.49	0.49	0.49	0.49	0.50	0.50	0.49	0.49	0.49	0.49	0.49	0.49	0.49
Panel D: RW Implied Strategy Return																			
Mean	-0.08	-0.01	-0.02	0.01	0.00	0.09	-0.01	0.00	0.05	-0.03	0.05	0.01	0.08	-0.01	-0.02	0.05	-0.05	-0.01	0.11
StDev	0.37	0.34	0.33	0.31	0.31	0.30	0.29	0.28	0.28	0.27	0.27	0.26	0.26	0.26	0.25	0.25	0.25	0.24	0.24
Sharp ratio	-0.23	-0.02	-0.07	0.04	0.01	0.31	-0.03	0.01	0.19	-0.11	0.18	0.04	0.32	-0.06	-0.09	0.22	-0.22	-0.04	0.44
SortinoRatio 0%	-0.02	-0.00	-0.01	0.00	0.00	0.03	-0.00	0.00	0.02	-0.01	0.02	0.00	0.03	-0.00	-0.01	0.02	-0.02	-0.00	0.04
OmegaRatio	-0.04	-0.00	-0.01	0.01	0.00	0.06	-0.01	0.00	0.03	-0.02	0.03	0.01	0.06	-0.01	-0.02	0.04	-0.04	-0.01	0.08
99% VaR(Cornish-Fisher)	-0.08	-0.07	-0.07	-0.06	-0.06	-0.06	-0.06	-0.06	-0.06	-0.06	-0.05	-0.05	-0.05	-0.05	-0.05	-0.06	-0.05	-0.05	-0.05
maxDrawdown	0.94	0.81	0.91	0.80	0.88	0.83	0.82	0.80	0.67	0.78	0.65	0.71	0.61	0.78	0.77	0.61	0.82	0.84	0.40
% of positive months	0.47	0.47	0.48	0.48	0.48	0.49	0.49	0.48	0.49	0.48	0.49	0.48	0.49	0.48	0.48	0.49	0.48	0.48	0.48
Panel E: Naive Implied Strategy Return																			
Mean	0.02	0.03	0.10	0.12	0.08	0.09	0.08	0.08	0.09	0.08	0.10	0.13	0.11	0.10	0.11	0.10	0.11	0.11	0.09
StDev	0.36	0.34	0.33	0.31	0.30	0.30	0.29	0.28	0.28	0.27	0.27	0.26	0.26	0.25	0.25	0.25	0.24	0.24	0.24
Sharp ratio	0.04	0.08	0.31	0.38	0.28	0.29	0.28	0.29	0.32	0.29	0.38	0.48	0.44	0.39	0.44	0.41	0.47	0.44	0.38
SortinoRatio 0%	0.00	0.01	0.03	0.03	0.02	0.03	0.03	0.03	0.03	0.03	0.03	0.04	0.04	0.03	0.04	0.04	0.04	0.04	0.03
OmegaRatio	0.01	0.01	0.06	0.07	0.05	0.05	0.05	0.05	0.06	0.05	0.07	0.09	0.08	0.07	0.08	0.08	0.09	0.08	0.07
99% VaR(Cornish-Fisher)	-0.08	-0.07	-0.07	-0.06	-0.06	-0.06	-0.06	-0.06	-0.06	-0.05	-0.05	-0.05	-0.05	-0.05	-0.05	-0.05	-0.05	-0.05	-0.05
maxDrawdown	0.77	0.79	0.70	0.69	0.69	0.73	0.70	0.74	0.73	0.71	0.63	0.57	0.59	0.60	0.55	0.51	0.49	0.50	0.56
% of positive months	0.47	0.47	0.48	0.48	0.48	0.49	0.49	0.49	0.49	0.49	0.49	0.49	0.49	0.49	0.49	0.48	0.48	0.48	0.48
Panel E: DNS Implied Strategy Return																			
Mean	0.02	0.01	0.05	0.07	0.07	0.03	0.06	0.07	0.09	0.10	0.12	0.11	0.11	0.11	0.11	0.12	0.11	0.11	0.10
StDev	0.37	0.34	0.33	0.31	0.31	0.30	0.29	0.28	0.28	0.27	0.27	0.26	0.26	0.26	0.25	0.25	0.25	0.24	0.24
Sharp ratio	0.06	0.04	0.17	0.22	0.24	0.10	0.21	0.25	0.31	0.37	0.44	0.40	0.43	0.43	0.45	0.49	0.45	0.45	0.40
SortinoRatio 0%	0.01	0.00	0.01	0.02	0.02	0.01	0.02	0.02	0.03	0.03	0.04	0.04	0.04	0.04	0.04	0.04	0.04	0.04	0.04
OmegaRatio	0.01	0.01	0.03	0.04	0.04	0.02	0.04	0.05	0.06	0.07	0.08	0.07	0.08	0.08	0.08	0.09	0.08	0.08	0.07
99% VaR(Cornish-Fisher)	-0.08	-0.07	-0.07	-0.06	-0.06	-0.06	-0.06	-0.06	-0.06	-0.06	-0.05	-0.05	-0.05	-0.05	-0.05	-0.05	-0.05	-0.05	-0.05
maxDrawdown	0.79	0.81	0.73	0.69	0.71	0.80	0.72	0.70	0.67	0.59	0.63	0.61	0.56	0.51	0.51	0.49	0.50	0.48	0.47
% of positive months	0.48	0.48	0.48	0.48	0.49	0.49	0.49	0.49	0.49	0.49	0.50	0.49	0.49	0.49	0.49	0.49	0.49	0.49	0.49

Note: performance of backwardation strategy on crude oil futures contracts is reported in this table with daily out-of-sample period from 16/04/1999 to 27/10/2016. The first row stands for time-to-maturity from 1-month to 19-month and panels in table separates forecasting models (Simple holding return for comparison, PF, EK, RW, Naive and DNS model sequentially ordered). For each panel, descriptive statistics are listed on the first column: Mean (annualized average value by multiplying sample mean with 250), StDev (standard deviation), Sharp ratio (mean adjusted to standard deviation), SortinoRatio (mean adjusted to downside deviation with minimum acceptable return is 0), OmegaRatio (probability weighted sharp ratio), VaR (Cornish-Fisher adjusted 99% Value at Risk), % of positive months (percentage of positive return in portfolio series).

From table 4.4, simple holding returns has consistent annual mean value across past 16 years out-of-sample testing, around 6% to 7%. Compared with the benchmark holding return, all models, except for RW, present relative better performance when time-to-maturity is over 10 months (long maturity forecasting makes difference). For maturity less than 10, non-functional idea from DNS method does not show strong attractiveness due to weak strategy performance. PF, EK and Naive, on the contrary, generally beat benchmark. PF method has dominated all other models in terms of strategy performance for all maturities where short time-to-maturity (up to 2-month) is the best record.

Specifically, annualized average returns from strategies based on PF predicted values are over 13% for all maturities, with Sharpe ratio starting from 0.37 up to 0.73 recorded as the best value for all methods. However, by going through all strategies' performance across all maturities, strategy volatility and maximum drawdown (maximum loss) are recorded with unacceptable value which can wipe out all strategy performance in the real world trading, even though there is a large improvement on the long-time maturity side from predicting models. An optimal variance reduction strategy with simultaneously buying and shorting two contracts is proposed later section to overcome this big loss and large volatility issue.

4.4.6 Forecasting Statistical Test: Model Confidence Set

To statistical conclude forecasting validity and distinguish the best forecasting models, the general model selection framework based on loss functions proposed by Hansen et al. (2011) is studied in this part. Procedure is based on T-Max statistics and bootstrap replication times are 5000. From the traditional aspect, single time series root mean square error and mean absolute error are calculated as loss functions to accommodate forecasting error idea, while from trading side, loss functions are obtained from investing strategy's maximum drawdown (maximum cumulative loss within a certain training period) and downside deviation (return series deviation when positive value is excluded as practical traders care more about negative risk side).

$$MaxDrawdown_{i,t} = \min\{MaxDrawdown_{i,t-1}, C\left(r_{i,t-D:t}\right) - C\left(r_{i,t-D-1:t-1}\right)\}$$

$$DownsideDeviation_{i,t} = \sqrt{\sum_{\ell=t-D}^{t} \frac{min\left[r_{i,\ell} - MAR, 0\right]^2}{n}}$$

where, t is the time index from first observation to time length n, i is the index standing for different investing results, $r_{i,\ell}$ is the asset i return at time ℓ, $r_{i,i:j}$ is the asset i return from time i to j, D is the window length for data time dimension, C is a function calculating the cumulative value of the input, $MaxDrawdown_{i,t}$ is the maximum loss (minimum value) for asset i at time t, $DownsideDeviation_{i,t}$ is the downside deviation value for product i at time t, $t_{i,t}$ is the time series return on series i at time t, MAR (Minimum Acceptable Return) is set to be 0 in this chapter.

To control and adapt to functions' measurements accuracy, different window lengths are settled up when computing the specific loss functions values. Window length is set to be 5, 30, 60, 90, 120 and 252 days for forecasting error measurement, from one week (short-run forecasting error) to one year (long-run forecasting error). Then 120, 252, 500, 1000 and 2000 days are used to calculate maximum loss and downside volatility because maximum loss normally stays unchanged within a short time period and volatility estimation is not accurate when sample size is small. Results are reported based on time-to-maturity, organized on the column of tables.

MCS is conducted given loss functions (MSE and MAE) and results are reported in table 4.5 and 4.6. Combining these two results, PF method has distinct advantages on forecasting error reduction with maturity before 7-month on 99% significance level. For maturity after 13-month, Naive method stands out as the best model on error reduction, indicating the fact that there is no necessity of predicting long-term maturity futures basis dynamics and the best way is to use its past one-period information. Results are robust to both MSE and MAE measurements as well as different window lengths on loss function values computation. On another side, results in terms of middle-term contracts are not easy to conclude a clear pattern on which model statistically outperforms others or whether there is a better forecasting model.

From economic point of view on discussing models' forecasting ability, MCS loss functions is

Table 4.5: Model Confidence Set Testing with Root Mean Square Error Loss Function

	Maturity.1	Maturity.2	Maturity.3	Maturity.4	Maturity.5	Maturity.6	Maturity.7	Maturity.8	Maturity.9	Maturity.10
Panel A: 5 Days Rolling RMSE										
Model	PF	PF	PF	PF	PF	PF	PF	PF,Naive	PF,Naive	PF,Naive
Prob.	0	0	0	0	0	0	0.005	0.123	0.831	0.099
Statistics	14.126	15.217	39.572	25.817	18.514	22.704	2.804	1.49	0.2	1.606
Confidence Interval	0.0616,1.9546	0.061,1.951	0.0652,1.8733	0.0548,1.9839	0.062,1.9399	0.0643,1.9298	0.0807,1.8968	0.0531,1.9195	0.0578,1.9205	0.0937,1.891
Panel B: 30 Days Rolling RMSE										
Model	PF	PF	PF	PF	PF	PF	PF,Naive	PF	PF	PF
Prob.	0	0	0	0	0	0	0.079	0.017	0.038	0
Statistics	15.446	17.489	51.378	13.936	17.774	7.67	1.72	2.453	2.104	4.392
Confidence Interval	0.076,2.0246	0.0672,1.9509	0.059,1.9169	0.0572,1.9917	0.0551,1.9231	0.0546,1.9346	0.0651,1.9445	0.07,1.9427	0.0476,2.0182	0.0636,1.9326
Panel C: 60 Days Rolling RMSE										
Model	PF	PF	PF	PF	PF	PF	PF	PF,Naive	PF,Naive	PF,Naive
Prob.	0	0	0	0	0	0	0.05	0.361	0.847	0.745
Statistics	11.31	11.081	10.337	9.51	8.865	4.845	2.023	0.906	0.194	0.312
Confidence Interval	0.0697,1.9134	0.0593,1.9392	0.0878,1.937	0.0769,1.8981	0.0661,1.9551	0.0595,1.9014	0.0612,1.9995	0.0643,1.9351	0.0515,1.946	0.058,1.9319
Panel D: 90 Days Rolling RMSE										
Model	PF	PF	PF	PF	PF	PF	PF	PF,Naive	PF,Naive	PF,Naive
Prob.	0	0	0	0	0	0	0.046	0.384	0.875	0.769
Statistics	10.033	11.312	10.788	9.856	8.541	4.722	2.007	0.857	0.16	0.316
Confidence Interval	0.0492,1.9377	0.0651,1.9704	0.0728,1.9182	0.07,1.9317	0.068,1.9166	0.0618,1.9305	0.0827,1.9195	0.0645,1.9762	0.0602,1.9448	0.0564,1.9251
Panel E: 120 Days Rolling RMSE										
Model	PF	PF	PF	PF	PF	PF	PF,Naive	PF,Naive	PF,Naive	PF,Naive
Prob.	0	0	0	0	0	0	0.059	0.463	0.995	0.566
Statistics	12.917	12.801	30.66	22.92	19.182	5.81	1.872	0.739	0.01	0.557
Confidence Interval	0.081,1.9529	0.0633,1.9173	0.0633,1.9556	0.0657,1.9242	0.0662,2.0351	0.0827,1.9679	0.0569,1.9208	0.0613,1.9719	0.0473,1.9131	0.0554,1.8978
Panel F: 250 Days Rolling RMSE										
Model	PF	PF	PF	PF	PF	PF	PF,Naive	PF,Naive	PF,Naive	PF,Naive
Prob.	0	0	0	0	0	0	0.093	0.478	0.98	0.492
Statistics	13.6	14.47	37.841	24.808	19.216	21.209	1.701	0.7	0.024	0.626
Confidence Interval	0.0655,1.9881	0.0675,1.9773	0.0629,1.9551	0.0583,1.9043	0.0598,1.9014	0.0678,1.9989	0.0505,2.0318	0.0692,1.9348	0.0713,1.9545	0.0576,1.9711

	Maturity.11	Maturity.12	Maturity.13	Maturity.14	Maturity.15	Maturity.16	Maturity.17	Maturity.18	Maturity.19
Panel A: 5 Days Rolling RMSE									
Model	Naive	PF,Naive	Naive	Naive	Naive	Naive	Naive	Naive	Naive
Prob.	0.009	0.427	0	0	0	0	0	0	0
Statistics	2.607	0.798	11.341	8.218	4.894	3.811	5.745	11.755	8.389
Confidence Interval	0.0708,1.9719	0.0738,1.9387	0.0667,1.9675	0.067,1.9463	0.0472,1.9194	0.0667,1.9623	0.0563,1.9818	0.0553,1.9498	0.0723,2.001
Panel B: 30 Days Rolling RMSE									
Model	Naive	PF,Naive	Naive	Naive	Naive	Naive	Naive	Naive	Naive
Prob.	0.008	0.324	0	0	0	0	0	0	0
Statistics	2.549	1.003	13.339	7.414	7.889	7.627	18.605	7.351	9.491
Confidence Interval	0.0707,1.9153	0.0693,1.9169	0.056,1.9476	0.0598,1.9662	0.0711,2.0277	0.0527,1.9289	0.0635,1.9071	0.0645,1.9524	0.0687,1.9787
Panel C: 60 Days Rolling RMSE									
Model	PF,Naive	PF,Naive	Naive	Naive	Naive	Naive	Naive	Naive	Naive
Prob.	0.205	0.335	0.001	0.017	0.017	0.013	0	0	0
Statistics	1.294	0.953	3.335	2.292	2.362	2.529	5.575	5.542	3.227
Confidence Interval	0.0747,1.9213	0.0603,1.9954	0.0584,1.9757	0.0899,1.9171	0.0737,1.946	0.056,1.9242	0.0634,1.9648	0.0747,1.9407	0.0513,1.9366
Panel D: 90 Days Rolling RMSE									
Model	PF,Naive	Naive	Naive	Naive	Naive	Naive	Naive	Naive	Naive
Prob.	0.081	0.048	0	0	0	0	0	0	0
Statistics	1.773	1.888	5.349	5.089	4.993	5.847	7.22	7.226	6.774
Confidence Interval	0.0528,1.9508	0.0624,1.8695	0.0626,1.9599	0.063,1.9883	0.0687,1.9514	0.0592,1.9768	0.0734,1.9945	0.0557,1.9518	0.0576,1.982
Panel E: 120 Days Rolling RMSE									
Model	Naive	PF,Naive	Naive	Naive	Naive	Naive	Naive	Naive	Naive
Prob.	0.026	0.272	0	0	0	0	0	0	0
Statistics	2.138	1.097	11.285	8.385	6.336	8.075	6.046	6.162	10.495
Confidence Interval	0.0803,1.9081	0.0619,2.0094	0.0653,1.9307	0.0583,1.9374	0.056,1.9602	0.0585,1.9011	0.0552,1.9374	0.0519,1.9165	0.0899,1.9111
Panel F: 250 Days Rolling RMSE									
Model	Naive	PF,Naive	Naive	Naive	Naive	Naive	Naive	Naive	Naive
Prob.	0.024	0.384	0	0	0.038	0.04	0	0	0
Statistics	2.226	0.92	12.1	8.682	2.084	2.091	5.883	11.403	9.434
Confidence Interval	0.0612,1.9457	0.0695,1.9258	0.0686,1.9288	0.0599,1.9973	0.0512,1.9567	0.0545,1.9889	0.0643,1.992	0.0646,1.94	0.0764,1.9024

Note: Hansen Model Confidence Set (MCS) statistical testing results based on root mean square error (RMSE) loss function is reported in this table with daily out-of-sample period from 16/04/1999 to 27/10/2016. We calculate RMSE for all candidate models (PF, EK, Naive, RW and DNS) on each maturity based time series data with rolling window: 5, 30, 60, 90, 120 and 250 days. For each testing procedure, 95% is the significance level and bootstrap replication number is 5000. Results are formatted in maturity level with first column showing: Model (best model suggested from MCS), Prob. (corresponding probability value), Statistics (T-Max statistics value) and Confidence Interval (95% confidence level from bootstrap).

replaced by calculating strategy return (via single contract backwardation theory) rolling characteristics: maximum drawdown and downside deviation. By passing these rolling loss function values to

Table 4.6: Model Confidence Set Testing with Mean Absolute Error Loss Function

	Maturity.1	Maturity.2	Maturity.3	Maturity.4	Maturity.5	Maturity.6	Maturity.7	Maturity.8	Maturity.9	Maturity.10
					Panel A: 5 Days Rolling MAE					
Model	PF	PF	PF	PF	PF	PF	PF,Naive	Naive	Naive	Naive
Prob.	0	0	0	0	0	0.009	0.069	0	0	0
Statistics	13.332	15.574	12.824	9.001	6.175	2.658	1.832	4.364	6.172	10.392
Confidence Interval	0.0541,1.8741	0.0825,1.9543	0.0672,1.9096	0.0669,1.9538	0.0542,1.8389	0.0866,1.9734	0.0611,1.9845	0.0536,1.9785	0.0719,1.9359	0.0672,2.0001
					Panel B: 30 Days Rolling MAE					
Model	PF	PF	PF	PF	PF	PF	Naive	Naive	Naive	Naive
Prob.	0	0	0	0	0	0.009	0.002	0	0	0
Statistics	14.718	16.504	15.314	12.872	7.32	2.577	3.337	8.715	7.928	9.793
Confidence Interval	0.0681,1.963	0.0558,1.951	0.0615,1.9801	0.0601,1.9036	0.0693,1.9433	0.0621,1.9965	0.0388,1.9835	0.0759,1.9474	0.0757,2.0354	0.0724,1.946
					Panel C: 60 Days Rolling MAE					
Model	PF	PF	PF	PF	PF	PF,Naive	PF,Naive	Naive	Naive	Naive
Prob.	0	0	0	0	0	0.121	0.28	0.024	0.002	0.001
Statistics	9.255	9.333	8.166	6.848	4.502	1.552	1.094	2.276	3.247	3.839
Confidence Interval	0.0691,1.9441	0.0656,2.0201	0.074,1.9492	0.0729,1.9294	0.0561,1.948	0.0658,1.9622	0.0728,1.9052	0.0641,1.9984	0.0734,1.9855	0.071,1.9362
					Panel D: 90 Days Rolling MAE					
Model	PF	PF	PF	PF	PF	PF,Naive	PF,Naive	Naive	Naive	Naive
Prob.	0	0	0	0	0	0.138	0.3	0.033	0.001	0.001
Statistics	8.77	8.601	7.747	6.731	4.463	1.491	1.031	2.107	3.147	3.523
Confidence Interval	0.0642,1.9213	0.069,1.9245	0.0629,1.9254	0.0662,1.968	0.0708,2.0009	0.062,1.8982	0.0623,1.9641	0.0603,1.9585	0.0567,1.874	0.0607,2.006
					Panel E: 120 Days Rolling MAE					
Model	PF	PF	PF	PF	PF	PF	PF,Naive	Naive	Naive	Naive
Prob.	0	0	0	0	0	0.03	0.171	0.005	0	0
Statistics	10.191	10.865	11.468	8.02	5.154	2.304	1.335	2.652	4.183	5.206
Confidence Interval	0.0506,2.0109	0.0635,1.9653	0.0664,1.8815	0.07,1.9534	0.0551,2.0161	0.0755,2.0008	0.0663,1.9955	0.0599,1.9296	0.0774,1.9761	0.0573,1.931
					Panel F: 250 Days Rolling MAE					
Model	PF	PF	PF	PF	PF	PF	PF,Naive	Naive	Naive	Naive
Prob.	0	0	0	0	0	0.011	0.076	0	0	0
Statistics	11.766	13.613	10.232	8.509	5.726	2.417	1.737	3.936	5.432	9.021
Confidence Interval	0.0749,1.9558	0.0532,1.9835	0.0528,1.9548	0.066,2.019	0.0612,1.9439	0.0646,1.9138	0.0628,1.9361	0.0752,2.0003	0.0704,1.9572	0.0758,1.9914

	Maturity.11	Maturity.12	Maturity.13	Maturity.14	Maturity.15	Maturity.16	Maturity.17	Maturity.18	Maturity.19
						Panel A: 5 Days Rolling MAE			
Model	Naive	Naive	Naive	Naive	Naive	Naive	Naive	Naive	Naive
Prob.	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0
Statistics	9.831	10.83	32.241	13.007	12.933	14.48	18.589	19.327	12.424
Confidence Interval	0.0564,1.9351	0.061,1.9748	0.068,2.0284	0.0702,1.9665	0.0722,1.9251	0.065,1.9908	0.0677,1.9106	0.0509,1.9834	0.0622,1.9802
						Panel B: 30 Days Rolling MAE			
Model	Naive	Naive	Naive	Naive	Naive	Naive	Naive	Naive	Naive
Prob.	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0
Statistics	14.129	14.623	39.108	18.866	16.641	35.211	22.972	39.838	44.192
Confidence Interval	0.0578,1.9763	0.0769,1.9239	0.0606,1.9284	0.0656,1.9923	0.0572,1.9787	0.067,1.9888	0.0589,1.9268	0.0661,1.9818	0.072,1.9043
						Panel C: 60 Days Rolling MAE			
Model	Naive	Naive	Naive	Naive	Naive	Naive	Naive	Naive	Naive
Prob.	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0
Statistics	5.312	4.894	9.192	8.173	7.267	9.018	9.487	9.392	8.91
Confidence Interval	0.0615,1.9808	0.0613,1.9966	0.0608,2.0594	0.0631,1.9207	0.0565,1.9594	0.0515,1.8985	0.0564,2.029	0.0616,1.9739	0.0515,1.9807
						Panel D: 90 Days Rolling MAE			
Model	Naive	Naive	Naive	Naive	Naive	Naive	Naive	Naive	Naive
Prob.	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0
Statistics	4.909	4.802	8.301	7.862	7.1	7.83	8.832	8.644	8.199
Confidence Interval	0.0661,1.9106	0.0576,1.925	0.0495,1.9827	0.0597,1.9416	0.0482,2.0075	0.065,1.9767	0.0611,2.0012	0.0598,1.9889	0.0591,1.917
						Panel E: 120 Days Rolling MAE			
Model	Naive	Naive	Naive	Naive	Naive	Naive	Naive	Naive	Naive
Prob.	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0
Statistics	6.993	7.707	13.384	9.706	11.065	11.075	12.919	13.165	10.577
Confidence Interval	0.0691,1.916	0.0726,1.9517	0.071,1.9413	0.0672,2.0332	0.0829,1.9146	0.0578,1.9452	0.0598,1.9926	0.0769,1.8765	0.0504,1.9395
						Panel F: 250 Days Rolling MAE			
Model	Naive	Naive	Naive	Naive	Naive	Naive	Naive	Naive	Naive
Prob.	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0
Statistics	8.188	7.516	28.082	11.501	10.335	14.098	14.851	17.027	17.079
Confidence Interval	0.055,1.942	0.0532,1.9461	0.054,1.9453	0.0776,1.898	0.072,1.9612	0.0839,1.9073	0.0523,1.9256	0.0632,1.983	0.0543,1.9089

Note: Hansen Model Confidence Set (MCS) statistical testing results based on mean absolute error (MAE) loss function is reported in this table with daily out-of-sample period from 16/04/1999 to 27/10/2016. MAE is calculated and reported for all candidate models (PF, EK, Naive, RW and DNS) on each maturity based time series data with rolling window: 5, 30, 60, 90, 120 and 250 days. For each testing procedure, 95% is the significance level and bootstrap replication number is 5000. Results are formatted in maturity level with first column showing: Model (best model suggested from MCS), Prob. (corresponding probability value), Statistics (T-Max statistics value) and Confidence Interval (95% confidence level from bootstrap).

MCS procedure, results are shown in table 4.7 and 4.8.

From these two tables, PF and EK methods are concluded of providing significant merits on

Table 4.7: Model Confidence Set Testing with Maximum Drawdown Loss Function

	Maturity.1	Maturity.2	Maturity.3	Maturity.4	Maturity.5	Maturity.6	Maturity.7	Maturity.8	Maturity.9	Maturity.10
Panel A: 120 Days Rolling Max Drawdown										
Model	PF	PF,EK	EK	PF	PF	EK	EK	EK	EK	EK
Prob.	0	0.055	0	0	0.043	0	0	0	0	0
Statistics	12.023	1.875	12.576	11.581	1.99	10.223	22.949	19.581	17.911	20.952
Confidence Interval	0.0719,1.9328	0.0709,1.9143	0.0662,1.9242	0.0675,1.9145	0.0635,1.9105	0.0675,1.9596	0.0643,1.9336	0.059,1.9283	0.0686,1.9281	0.0629,1.9373
Panel B: 250 Days Rolling Max Drawdown										
Model	PF,EK	PF	PF	PF,EK,Naive,RW	PF,EK	PF,EK	EK	EK	PF,EK	EK
Prob.	0.988	0	0.003	0.063	0.101	0.425	0	0.002	0.145	0.003
Statistics	0.018	4.843	3.109	2.122	1.627	0.826	5.915	3.099	1.448	2.709
Confidence Interval	0.0493,1.9457	0.064,1.9316	0.0667,1.9307	0.321,2.1665	0.0765,1.897	0.0719,1.9574	0.0765,1.968	0.059,1.9344	0.0827,1.8939	0.0442,1.9523
Panel C: 500 Days Rolling Max Drawdown										
Model	PF	EK	EK	PF	EK	EK	EK	EK	EK	EK
Prob.	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0
Statistics	17.116	20.393	20.797	20.375	6.811	16.895	14.738	13.24	25.968	27.367
Confidence Interval	0.0818,1.9476	0.065,1.9623	0.0746,1.9782	0.0635,1.9165	0.0522,1.9354	0.0613,1.9109	0.0652,1.939	0.0678,1.9968	0.049,1.9259	0.0665,1.9574
Panel D: 1000 Days Rolling Max Drawdown										
Model	PF,EK	PF,EK	PF	PF	PF	EK	EK	EK	EK	EK
Prob.	0.998	0.125	0	0	0	0.013	0	0	0	0
Statistics	0.004	1.546	8.235	5.986	3.175	2.583	7.513	4.448	3.733	5.897
Confidence Interval	0.0683,1.9699	0.0792,1.9702	0.0639,2.0431	0.071,2.0039	0.0525,2.0125	0.0739,1.9263	0.0517,1.9903	0.0718,1.9742	0.0486,1.9594	0.0678,1.9796
Panel E: 2000 Days Rolling Max Drawdown										
Model	PF,EK	PF,EK	EK	PF	PF,EK	EK	EK	EK	EK	EK
Prob.	0.062	0.087	0	0	0.359	0	0	0	0	0
Statistics	1.857	1.706	5.467	15.738	0.89	9.049	13.863	9.916	8.583	36.194
Confidence Interval	0.0745,1.9481	0.0681,1.9223	0.0582,1.932	0.0677,1.9712	0.0558,2.0207	0.0509,2.0147	0.0627,1.9048	0.0575,2.0963	0.0634,2.0031	0.0717,1.9561

	Maturity.11	Maturity.12	Maturity.13	Maturity.14	Maturity.15	Maturity.16	Maturity.17	Maturity.18	Maturity.19
Panel A: 120 Days Rolling Max Drawdown									
Model	PF,EK	PF	EK	EK	EK	PF	PF	PF	PF
Prob.	0.534	0.04	0	0	0	0	0	0	0.01
Statistics	0.612	2.066	7.352	12.933	12.447	19.303	26.154	5.821	2.665
Confidence Interval	0.0423,1.9181	0.0578,2.0107	0.0785,1.963	0.0696,1.9975	0.0687,2.006	0.0702,1.9306	0.0696,1.843	0.0713,1.9389	0.0662,1.9852
Panel B: 250 Days Rolling Max Drawdown									
Model	PF	PF	PF,EK	EK	PF,EK	PF,EK	PF,EK,Naive,DNS	PF,EK,Naive,DNS	EK
Prob.	0	0	0.305	0.003	0.059	0.827	0.147	0.134	0
Statistics	7.783	5.26	1.024	2.96	1.847	0.235	1.752	1.836	8.894
Confidence Interval	0.0608,1.9763	0.0636,1.987	0.0731,1.9834	0.079,1.958	0.0662,1.9067	0.0675,1.9187	0.3637,2.2368	0.3769,2.2961	0.0471,1.9809
Panel C: 500 Days Rolling Max Drawdown									
Model	PF	EK	EK	EK	EK	PF	PF	PF	RW
Prob.	0	0.044	0	0	0	0	0	0	0
Statistics	8.728	1.989	19.362	20.358	18.416	14.984	10.446	4.308	7.189
Confidence Interval	0.0736,1.8953	0.0804,1.9322	0.0668,1.9621	0.0553,1.9719	0.06,1.9596	0.095,1.9616	0.0682,1.9724	0.063,1.9888	0.0733,1.928
Panel D: 1000 Days Rolling Max Drawdown									
Model	PF	PF	PF,EK	EK	EK	PF	PF	PF	EK
Prob.	0.019	0.001	0.069	0.001	0.032	0.045	0	0.019	0
Statistics	2.29	3.398	1.813	3.041	2.066	1.991	4.357	2.283	5.859
Confidence Interval	0.0673,1.9774	0.0732,1.9365	0.065,1.9766	0.0635,1.9326	0.0581,1.9145	0.0624,1.9089	0.0729,1.9676	0.0721,1.9667	0.0535,1.9683
Panel E: 2000 Days Rolling Max Drawdown									
Model	EK	PF	EK	EK	EK	PF	PF	PF	EK
Prob.	0	0.003	0	0	0.001	0	0	0.001	0.002
Statistics	3.658	3.119	3.349	4.675	3.684	4.67	6.893	3.84	3.285
Confidence Interval	0.0516,1.9313	0.0621,1.9041	0.0668,1.9537	0.0624,1.9403	0.0565,1.956	0.0592,1.9645	0.0743,1.9855	0.0525,2.0407	0.0605,1.9242

Note: Hansen Model Confidence Set (MCS) statistical testing results based on maximum drawdown (Max Drawdown) loss function is reported in this table with daily out-of-sample period from 16/04/1999 to 27/10/2016. Max Drawdown is calculated and reported for all candidate models (PF, EK, Naive, RW and DNS) on each maturity based time series data with rolling window: 120, 250, 500, 1000 and 2000 days. For each testing procedure, 95% is the significance level and bootstrap replication number is 5000. Results are formatted in maturity level with first column showing: Model (best model suggested from MCS), Prob. (corresponding probability value), Statistics (T-Max statistics value) and Confidence Interval (95% confidence level from bootstrap).

strategy loss reduction interchangeably. This means, for contracts in the short and long time-to-maturity, PF methods stands on the success role of demonstrating best results on maximum loss and downside volatility control while EK method shifts to this role when time-to-maturity for contracts are in the middle. This evidence for maximum drawdown loss measurement is valid at maturity less than 5 months and larger than 15 months for PF and within this range for EK method. On the side of

Table 4.8: Model Confidence Set Testing with Downside Deviation Loss Function

	Maturity.1	Maturity.2	Maturity.3	Maturity.4	Maturity.5	Maturity.6	Maturity.7	Maturity.8	Maturity.9	Maturity.10
Panel A: 120 Days Rolling Downside Deviation										
Model	PF	PF	PF	PF	PF	EK	EK	EK	EK	EK
Prob.	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0
Statistics	6.005	4.771	7.845	9.28	17.473	4.99	22.322	18.179	15.002	7.961
Confidence Interval	0.0667,2.0075	0.0575,1.9573	0.0482,1.9477	0.063,1.9585	0.0596,1.9392	0.0685,1.9386	0.0625,1.9543	0.0695,1.9175	0.0691,2.0191	0.0546,2.0184
Panel B: 250 Days Rolling Downside Deviation										
Model	PF	PF,EK	PF	PF,EK,Naive	PF	PF,EK	EK	EK	PF,EK,RW	EK
Prob.	0.022	0.056	0.023	0.126	0	0.079	0	0.003	0.077	0.043
Statistics	2.284	1.925	2.304	1.723	4.007	1.744	6.553	3.089	1.928	2.126
Confidence Interval	0.0516,2.0273	0.0749,1.9702	0.0647,1.9168	0.2535,2.1336	0.061,1.9601	0.0589,1.9862	0.0614,1.9371	0.0727,1.9567	0.1969,2.1022	0.0655,2.063
Panel C: 500 Days Rolling Downside Deviation										
Model	PF	PF	PF	PF	PF	EK	EK	EK	EK	EK
Prob.	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0
Statistics	26.166	16.431	18.259	13.436	33.341	8.7	23.519	31.542	37.835	35.738
Confidence Interval	0.0621,1.8702	0.0517,2.0133	0.0547,1.9643	0.0546,1.9714	0.0492,1.9506	0.0527,1.9068	0.0642,1.9477	0.066,1.846	0.0551,1.9279	0.0585,1.9976
Panel D: 1000 Days Rolling Downside Deviation										
Model	PF	PF	PF	PF	PF	EK	EK	EK	EK	EK
Prob.	0	0.012	0	0	0	0.01	0	0	0	0
Statistics	3.255	2.56	3.275	6.31	5.924	2.497	4.121	4.197	3.596	3.852
Confidence Interval	0.0629,1.9544	0.0753,1.9573	0.0475,1.9492	0.0743,2.0046	0.0506,1.9425	0.0701,1.9575	0.0623,1.9442	0.0642,1.9313	0.0637,1.9651	0.079,2.044
Panel E: 2000 Days Rolling Downside Deviation										
Model	PF	PF	PF	PF	PF	EK	EK	EK	EK	EK
Prob.	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0
Statistics	4.312	3.932	4.368	9.414	9.743	3.597	5.638	5.777	5.289	7.092
Confidence Interval	0.0623,2.0174	0.0541,1.9037	0.0593,2.0189	0.0722,1.9464	0.0718,1.9061	0.0659,1.8918	0.0621,1.9426	0.0653,1.924	0.0739,1.9291	0.0682,1.9866

	Maturity.11	Maturity.12	Maturity.13	Maturity.14	Maturity.15	Maturity.16	Maturity.17	Maturity.18	Maturity.19
Panel A: 120 Days Rolling Downside Deviation									
Model	EK	EK	EK	EK	EK	EK	PF	PF	EK
Prob.	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0
Statistics	7.288	13.055	10.813	4.948	4.149	6.204	3.638	3.982	9.932
Confidence Interval	0.0686,1.868	0.0626,1.9667	0.067,1.93	0.0632,1.974	0.0687,1.941	0.073,1.9245	0.0523,2.0148	0.0599,1.9973	0.0799,1.9607
Panel B: 250 Days Rolling Downside Deviation									
Model	PF,EK	PF,EK	PF,EK,RW	PF,EK	PF,EK	PF,EK,Naive,RW,DNS	PF,EK,Naive	PF,EK,Naive	PF,EK,RW
Prob.	0.094	0.062	0.054	0.135	0.268	0.114	0.873	0.862	0.08
Statistics	1.693	1.949	2.04	1.47	1.115	1.949	0.392	0.422	1.878
Confidence Interval	0.0612,1.8966	0.0521,2.0573	0.2041,2.0616	0.0576,1.981	0.0637,1.9023	0.445,2.3393	0.2218,2.0227	0.2715,2.0714	0.1657,2.0803
Panel C: 500 Days Rolling Downside Deviation									
Model	EK	EK	EK	EK	EK	EK	PF	PF	EK
Prob.	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0
Statistics	32.561	22.771	15.956	7.039	5.579	9.39	20.828	20.017	45.247
Confidence Interval	0.0674,1.959	0.0526,1.9405	0.0578,1.9696	0.0544,1.9475	0.0774,1.968	0.0766,1.8955	0.0613,1.97	0.073,1.9636	0.0567,1.9818
Panel D: 1000 Days Rolling Downside Deviation									
Model	EK	EK	EK	EK	PF,EK	EK	PF,EK,Naive	PF,EK,Naive	EK
Prob.	0.008	0.004	0	0.029	0.077	0.004	0.557	0.451	0.001
Statistics	2.516	3.033	3.179	2.138	1.745	2.793	0.83	0.971	3.514
Confidence Interval	0.0721,1.9713	0.0703,1.9555	0.0513,2.0111	0.0649,1.9477	0.055,1.901	0.0739,1.8994	0.2312,2.1653	0.235,2.089	0.0627,1.8978
Panel E: 2000 Days Rolling Downside Deviation									
Model	EK	EK	EK	EK	EK	EK	PF,EK,Naive	PF,EK	EK
Prob.	0	0	0	0	0.004	0	0.196	0.183	0
Statistics	3.552	4.914	5.245	3.513	2.843	4.307	1.492	1.341	5.559
Confidence Interval	0.0759,1.9426	0.0617,2.0335	0.0568,1.9749	0.0562,1.9284	0.0668,1.9768	0.0805,1.8779	0.2592,2.0925	0.0719,1.9063	0.064,1.9716

Note: Hansen Model Confidence Set (MCS) statistical testing results based on Downside Deviation loss function is reported in this table with daily out-of-sample period from 16/04/1999 to 27/10/2016. Downside Deviation is calculated and reported for all candidate models (PF, EK, Naive, RW and DNS) on each maturity based time series data with rolling window: 120, 250, 500, 1000 and 2000 days. For each testing procedure, 95% is the significance level and bootstrap replication number is 5000. Results are formatted in maturity level with first column showing: Model (best model suggested from MCS), Prob. (corresponding probability value), Statistics (T-Max statistics value) and Confidence Interval (95% confidence level from bootstrap).

PF, downside deviation holds the same results on short time-to-maturity (less than 5 months), while long time-to-maturity is only applied to 17-month and 18-month. All these results are robust under 99% significant and all window lengths calculation scenarios.

4.4.7 Real Time Trading Application based on Forecasted Futures Basis

Up to now, model forecasting economic scale is only explored on the sign of the futures basis within the framework of contango and backwardation theory, which leaves the discussion on the future basis magnitude economic effect missing. In this section, a new idea is proposed for the sake of (1) how to use the forecasted futures basis in real world practical application and (2) to what extent does forecasting accuracy matter.

Inspired by Cecchetti et al. (1988), this future contract trading idea is conducted in the spirit of variance reduction. Different from the traditional hedging strategy which uses the future contract to cover the risk from underlying spot market transaction, new approach here is trying to find out the optimal strategy by trading futures contracts only. Performance is tested for all models' forecasted futures basis from the previous section for comparison.

To ensure this new application purely depend on futures basis, this chapter assumes no explicitly inventory cost or convenience yield effect (Fama and French, 2016, Gorton and Rouwenhorst, 2004 and Gorton et al., 2007) in futures contract pricing model. Specifically, in the application, futures basis contains all the information among two contracts pricing relationship. For simplicity, interest rate is constant or deterministic which is far from stochastic process proposed by Schwartz (1997) and Casassus and Collin D. (2005) who price future contract by assuming interest rate is a mean-reverting process and a key factor influencing convenience yield.

All these effects are taken into account by assuming that futures basis process has been well controlled and its dynamics follows the functional autoregressive AR(1) process. Consider a maturity based futures contract for a certain product with price F_{τ_j} and time left to expire τ_j. New trading application is completed by trading two future contracts simultaneously, rebalancing frequently in order to obtain the future basis risk premium and reducing the concern from basis risk (Tomek and

Peterson, 2001)[41].

Portfolio return of this trading strategy is formatted in an expectation way:

$$E\left(R_{t+1,strategy}\right) = E\left(R_{t+1,\tau_1}\right) + hE\left(R_{t+1,\tau_2}\right) \tag{4.4.1}$$

where, E is the expectation operator with conditional information set time subscript t is ignored, $h \in [-1,1]$ is the position (ratio) for trading on the same underlying but with maturity τ_2 contract, for $h = -1/1$, fully short/long futures contract on F_{t,τ_2}, $E(R_{t+1,strategy})$ is the expected trading strategy return from trading activity, $R_{t,\tau}$ is log return calculated based on the same underlying,

$$R_{t+1,\tau_1} = \log\left(\frac{F_{t+1,\tau_1}}{F_{t,\tau_1+1}}\right) \tag{4.4.2}$$

for more general application, time-to-maturity differential $(\tau_2 - \tau_1)$ is taken into account following the spirit from Koijen et al. (2013) and basis spread definition in (Yang, 2013),

$$F_{t,\tau_2} = F_{t,\tau_1} \exp\left(Basis_{t,\tau_1}(\tau_2 - \tau_1)\right) \tag{4.4.3}$$

the strategy return is then re-written as follows,

$$E\left(R_{t+1,strategy}\right) = \log E\left(F_{t+1,\tau_1}\right) - \log\left(F_{t,\tau_1+1}\right) + h\log E\left(F_{t+1,\tau_2}\right) - h\log\left(F_{t,\tau_2+1}\right) \tag{4.4.4}$$

for the sake of calculating trading position h, variance minimization on portfolio return is presented

[41] trading strategy based on Naive model forecasting result is not tested here due to no signal generation

here,

$$\underset{h\in[-1,1]}{Minimize}\{VAR\left[E\left(R_{t+1,strategy}\right)\right]\} =$$

$$\underset{h\in[-1,1]}{Minimize}\{VAR\left[\log E\left(F_{t+1,\tau_1}\right) - \log\left(F_{t,\tau_1+1}\right) + h\log E\left(F_{t+1,\tau_2}\right) - h\log\left(F_{t,\tau_2+1}\right)\right]\} \quad (4.4.5)$$

ignoring the variance operator and simplifying items inside square bracket,

$$E\left(R_{t+1,strategy}\right) =$$

$$\left[\log E\left(F_{t+1,\tau_2}\right) - \log E\left(F_{t+1,\tau_1}\right)\right] + (h-1)\log E\left(F_{t+1,\tau_2}\right)$$

$$+2\log E\left(F_{t+1,\tau_1}\right) + \left[\log\left(F_{t,\tau_2+1}\right) - \log\left(F_{t,\tau_1+1}\right)\right] -$$

$$(1+h)\log\left(F_{t,\tau_2+1}\right) \quad (4.4.6)$$

$$E\left(R_{t+1,strategy}\right) =$$

$$\left[\log E\left(F_{t+1,\tau_2}\right) - \log E\left(F_{t+1,\tau_1}\right)\right] + \left[\log\left(F_{t,\tau_2+1}\right) - \log\left(F_{t,\tau_1+1}\right)\right]$$

$$-2\left[\log E\left(F_{t+1,\tau_2}\right) - \log E\left(F_{t+1,\tau_1}\right)\right] - (1+h)\log\left(F_{t,\tau_2+1}\right)$$

$$+(h+1)\log E\left(F_{t+1,\tau_2}\right) \quad (4.4.7)$$

replacing the pricing formula between futures contracts via different maturities will be,

$$E\left(R_{t+1,strategy}\right) = E\left(B_{t+1,\tau_1}\right)(\tau_2-\tau_1) +$$

$$B_{t,\tau_1+1}(\tau_2-\tau_1) - 2E\left(B_{t+1,\tau_1}\right)(\tau_2-\tau_1) - (1+h)\log\left(F_{t,\tau_2+1}\right) + (h+1)\log E\left(F_{t+1,\tau_2}\right) \quad (4.4.8)$$

replacing the expectation operator with forecasted value in future basis and combining same values,

$$E\left(R_{t+1,strategy}\right) = -\hat{B}_{t+1,\tau_1}(\tau_2-\tau_1) + B_{t,\tau_1+1}(\tau_2-\tau_1) - (1+h)\log\left(F_{t,\tau_2+1}\right) + (h+1)\log E\left(F_{t+1,\tau_2}\right) \tag{4.4.9}$$

under the portfolio minimum variance hedging framework, the target is now constructed as,

$$\begin{aligned}\underset{h\in[-1,1]}{Minimize}\{VAR\left[E\left(R_{t+1,strategy}\right)\right]\} = \\ \underset{h\in[-1,1]}{Minimize}\{VAR[-\hat{B}_{t+1,\tau_1}(\tau_2-\tau_1) + B_{t,\tau_1+1}(\tau_2-\tau_1) \\ -(1+h)\log\left(F_{t,\tau_2+1}\right) + (h+1)\log E\left(F_{t+1,\tau_2}\right)]\}\end{aligned} \tag{4.4.10}$$

since $\hat{B}_{t+1,\tau_1}$, B_{t,τ_1+1} and $\log\left(F_{t,\tau_2+1}\right)$ are known at time t, the only uncertainity adding to this trading strategy is due to variation from expectation of τ_2 maturity contract log price $\log E\left(F_{t+1,\tau_2}\right)$, therefore minimum variance target is now transferred to minimizing the variance from,

$$\begin{aligned}\underset{h\in[-1,1]}{Minimize}\{VAR\left[E\left(R_{t+1,strategy}\right)\right]\} = \\ DeterministicPart + \underset{h\in[-1,1]}{Minimize}\{VAR\left[(h+1)\log E\left(F_{t+1,\tau_2}\right)\right]\}\end{aligned} \tag{4.4.11}$$

it easy to see that trading position equal to -1 will automatically get rid of the unknown variation part from this strategy return.

To formalise, trading rules is organised under the condition that the expectation of the futures basis is obtained as follows,

$$
\left\{
\begin{array}{ll}
if & Basis_{t,\tau_1+1}\left(\tau_2-\tau_1\right)-\hat{Basis}_{t+1,\tau_1}\left(\tau_2-\tau_1\right)>0, \\
\multicolumn{2}{c}{weights=[1,-1], E\left(Return_{t+1,strategy}\right)=E\left(R_{t+1,\tau_1+1}\right)-E\left(R_{t+1,\tau_2+1}\right)} \\
if & Basis_{t,\tau_1+1}\left(\tau_2-\tau_1\right)-\hat{Basis}_{t+1,\tau_1}\left(\tau_2-\tau_1\right)<0, \\
\multicolumn{2}{c}{weights=[-1,1], E\left(Return_{t+1,strategy}\right)=-E\left(R_{t+1,\tau_1+1}\right)+E\left(R_{t+1,\tau_2+1}\right),}
\end{array}
\right\}
$$

trading strategy is then applied on crude oil future market in terms of different time-to-maturity contracts based on forecasted futures basis, reported in table 4.9.

Table 4.9: Performance of Trading Strategy on Individual Maturity Level

	Maturity.1	Maturity.2	Maturity.3	Maturity.4	Maturity.5	Maturity.6	Maturity.7	Maturity.8	Maturity.9	Maturity.10	Maturity.11	Maturity.12	Maturity.13	Maturity.14	Maturity.15	Maturity.16	Maturity.17	Maturity.18	Maturity.19
Panel A: Simple Holding Return																			
Mean	0.06	0.06	0.06	0.06	0.06	0.06	0.06	0.06	0.07	0.07	0.07	0.07	0.07	0.07	0.07	0.07	0.07	0.07	0.07
StDev	0.37	0.34	0.33	0.31	0.31	0.30	0.29	0.28	0.28	0.27	0.27	0.26	0.26	0.26	0.25	0.25	0.25	0.24	0.24
Sharp ratio	0.16	0.17	0.19	0.20	0.21	0.21	0.22	0.23	0.24	0.24	0.25	0.25	0.26	0.26	0.27	0.27	0.27	0.28	0.28
SortinoRatio 0%	0.01	0.02	0.02	0.02	0.02	0.02	0.02	0.02	0.02	0.02	0.02	0.02	0.02	0.02	0.02	0.02	0.02	0.02	0.02
OmegaRatio	0.03	0.03	0.03	0.04	0.04	0.04	0.04	0.04	0.04	0.04	0.04	0.05	0.05	0.05	0.05	0.05	0.05	0.05	0.05
99% VaR(Cornish-Fisher)	-0.08	-0.07	-0.07	-0.06	-0.06	-0.06	-0.06	-0.06	-0.06	-0.05	-0.05	-0.05	-0.05	-0.05	-0.05	-0.05	-0.05	-0.05	-0.05
maxDrawdown	0.90	0.88	0.87	0.86	0.85	0.85	0.84	0.84	0.84	0.83	0.83	0.82	0.82	0.81	0.81	0.81	0.81	0.80	0.80
% of positive months	0.49	0.49	0.49	0.50	0.50	0.50	0.50	0.50	0.50	0.50	0.50	0.50	0.50	0.50	0.50	0.50	0.50	0.50	0.50
Panel B: PF Implied Strategy Return																			
Mean	0.40	0.26	0.19	0.16	0.13	0.11	0.09	0.08	0.08	0.07	0.06	0.06	0.05	0.05	0.04	0.04	0.04	0.04	0.05
StDev	0.05	0.03	0.02	0.02	0.02	0.02	0.01	0.01	0.02	0.02	0.01	0.02	0.02	0.02	0.02	0.03	0.02	0.02	0.03
Sharp ratio	7.92	7.76	8.50	6.76	6.53	6.01	6.16	5.75	4.67	4.34	4.79	3.26	3.47	2.46	1.99	1.70	2.32	2.09	1.64
SortinoRatio 0%	3.26	1.94	2.55	1.33	2.18	1.04	1.17	1.15	1.08	0.83	0.72	0.69	0.95	0.58	0.28	0.35	0.42	0.26	0.57
OmegaRatio	13.00	7.73	8.21	8.68	7.34	5.24	4.16	4.00	3.93	3.59	3.47	3.39	2.88	2.63	2.07	2.10	1.82	1.62	2.40
99% VaR(Cornish-Fisher)	-0.02	-0.14	-0.01	-0.04	-0.29	-0.03	-0.01	-0.01	-0.01	-0.01	-0.02	-0.01	-0.01	-0.01	-0.06	-0.01	-0.01	-0.06	-0.01
maxDrawdown	0.03	0.02	0.01	0.03	0.01	0.02	0.01	0.01	0.01	0.01	0.02	0.01	0.01	0.02	0.03	0.03	0.02	0.03	0.01
% of positive months	0.77	0.75	0.75	0.75	0.74	0.72	0.70	0.68	0.68	0.67	0.66	0.66	0.63	0.63	0.61	0.60	0.59	0.59	0.59
Panel C: EK Implied Strategy Return																			
Mean	0.22	0.16	0.11	0.09	0.08	0.07	0.06	0.06	0.06	0.05	0.05	0.04	0.03	0.04	0.03	0.04	0.03	0.03	0.03
StDev	0.06	0.04	0.02	0.02	0.02	0.02	0.02	0.01	0.02	0.02	0.01	0.02	0.02	0.02	0.02	0.03	0.02	0.02	0.03
Sharp ratio	4.05	4.53	4.54	3.70	3.81	3.87	3.76	3.97	3.47	3.07	3.45	2.23	2.28	1.92	1.22	1.39	1.84	1.65	0.90
SortinoRatio 0%	0.61	0.72	0.68	0.52	0.70	0.48	0.41	0.67	0.69	0.44	0.47	0.26	0.22	0.42	0.12	0.28	0.29	0.18	0.09
OmegaRatio	1.84	1.97	1.77	1.78	1.86	1.88	1.51	1.81	2.01	1.72	1.75	1.53	1.30	1.61	0.91	1.44	1.22	1.09	0.86
99% VaR(Cornish-Fisher)	-0.03	-0.01	-0.01	-0.05	-0.02	-0.07	-0.03	-0.01	-0.00	-0.03	-0.02	-0.12	-0.14	-0.1	-0.19	-0.01	-0.02	-0.08	-0.21
maxDrawdown	0.04	0.02	0.02	0.03	0.01	0.03	0.02	0.01	0.01	0.02	0.02	0.04	0.03	0.02	0.05	0.03	0.02	0.03	0.05
% of positive months	0.61	0.63	0.61	0.62	0.62	0.62	0.62	0.61	0.62	0.61	0.61	0.60	0.60	0.59	0.57	0.57	0.56	0.56	0.56
Panel D: RW Implied Strategy Return																			
Mean	0.03	0.02	0.00	0.01	0.00	0.01	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.01	0.00	0.01	0.00	0.01	0.00	0.01	0.01	0.01	0.01
StDev	0.06	0.04	0.03	0.03	0.02	0.02	0.02	0.01	0.02	0.02	0.01	0.02	0.02	0.02	0.02	0.03	0.02	0.02	0.03
Sharp ratio	0.50	0.61	0.18	0.41	0.20	0.39	0.26	0.21	0.09	0.55	0.27	0.33	0.26	0.70	0.21	0.54	0.52	0.37	0.28
SortinoRatio 0%	0.05	0.07	0.02	0.05	0.02	0.04	0.03	0.02	0.01	0.08	0.03	0.03	0.03	0.15	0.02	0.10	0.07	0.04	0.03
OmegaRatio	0.13	0.15	0.04	0.11	0.05	0.10	0.06	0.05	0.03	0.18	0.08	0.14	0.10	0.39	0.11	0.40	0.24	0.17	0.21
99% VaR(Cornish-Fisher)	-0.05	-0.01	-0.03	-0.04	-0.17	-0.03	-0.02	-0.05	-0.10	-0.01	-0.03	-0.13	-0.13	-0.01	-0.19	-0.01	-0.02	-0.07	-0.21
maxDrawdown	0.16	0.08	0.04	0.05	0.05	0.03	0.03	0.04	0.05	0.02	0.03	0.05	0.03	0.02	0.06	0.03	0.03	0.03	0.05
% of positive months	0.48	0.48	0.48	0.47	0.47	0.48	0.48	0.47	0.47	0.48	0.48	0.48	0.49	0.49	0.49	0.49	0.49	0.48	0.49
Panel E: DNS Implied Strategy Return																			
Mean	0.03	0.00	-0.00	-0.00	-0.00	0.00	0.00	0.01	0.00	0.00	0.01	0.01	0.01	0.01	0.01	0.01	0.00	0.01	0.02
StDev	0.06	0.04	0.03	0.03	0.02	0.02	0.02	0.01	0.02	0.02	0.01	0.02	0.02	0.02	0.02	0.03	0.02	0.02	0.03
Sharp ratio	0.56	0.06	-0.16	-0.14	-0.11	0.02	0.15	0.52	0.05	0.16	0.37	0.37	0.41	0.39	0.41	0.34	0.29	0.60	0.59
SortinoRatio 0%	0.06	0.01	-0.02	-0.01	-0.01	0.00	0.01	0.06	0.00	0.01	0.04	0.05	0.05	0.04	0.05	0.04	0.03	0.09	0.10
OmegaRatio	0.15	0.01	-0.03	-0.04	-0.03	0.00	0.03	0.14	0.02	0.05	0.11	0.15	0.15	0.20	0.23	0.23	0.13	0.30	0.49
99% VaR(Cornish-Fisher)	-0.05	-0.03	-0.02	-0.06	-0.03	-0.07	-0.03	-0.02	-0.10	-0.09	-0.02	-0.03	-0.03	-0.17	-0.06	-0.18	-0.09	-0.01	-0.01
maxDrawdown	0.16	0.16	0.11	0.11	0.10	0.08	0.06	0.04	0.07	0.04	0.04	0.04	0.02	0.04	0.03	0.05	0.04	0.04	0.04
% of positive months	0.47	0.47	0.47	0.47	0.47	0.47	0.48	0.48	0.48	0.48	0.48	0.47	0.47	0.47	0.48	0.48	0.48	0.48	0.49

Note: performance of trading strategy on crude oil futures contracts is reported in this table with panels separating forecasting models (Simple holding return for comparison, PF, EK, RW and DNS model sequentially ordered) and first row standing for different time-to-maturity. For each panel, descriptive statistics are listed on the first column with Mean is annualized, StDev (standard deviation), Sharp ratio (mean adjusted to standard deviation), SortinoRatio (mean adjusted to downside deviation with minimum acceptable return is 0), OmegaRatio (probability weighted sharp ratio), VaR (Cornish-Fisher adjusted 99% Value at Risk), % of positive months (percentage of positive return in portfolio series).

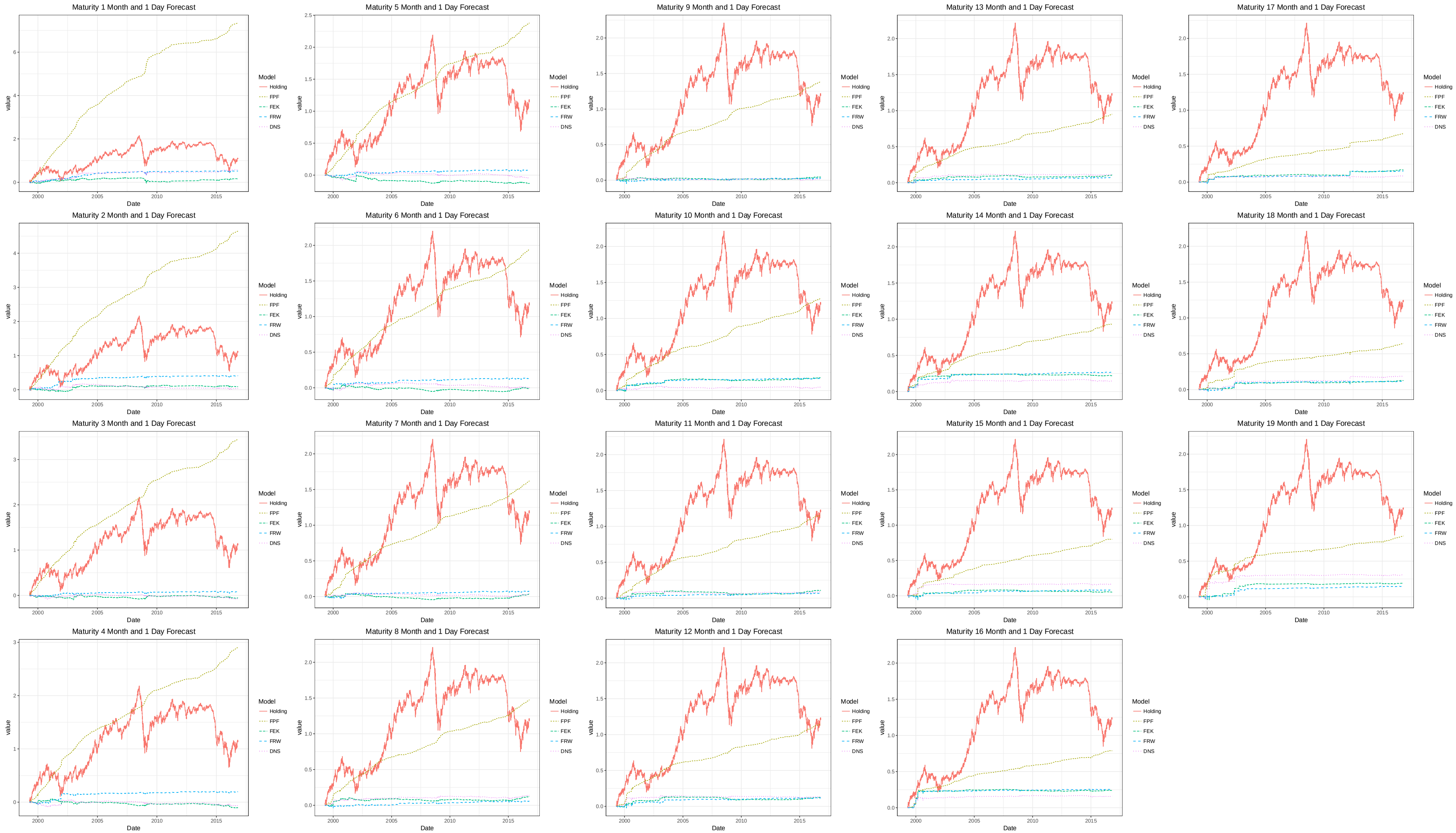
Comparing with simple buy-and-hold strategy return (Simple Holding Return in table), in general, annualized strategy return from trading activity does not show strong improvement except for certain specific maturity contracts in table 4.9. Holding and rolling nearby contracts for different time-to-maturity will make on average 6% return across over the past 16 years for crude oil market.

Consistent trading purpose, PF and EK implied futures basis indeed reduce strategy volatility to a large extent which is reflected by high risk adjusted measure (Sharpe ratio, Sortino Ratio and Omega Ratio). For those contracts with high risk adjusted ratio, annualized mean returns are also larger than buy-and-hold strategy. Specifically, for crude oil product, Sharpe ratio is peaked at 8.5 for 3-month time-to-maturity contract and on average over 1.64 across all maturities for PF method only. EK method has also achieved 22% annual return in maximum with Sharpe ratio 4.05.

Functional Naive model is not considered in this part as signal generation step (basis difference between forecasted and realised one) is not available, which implies no trading at all time. Functional random walk falls into the worst performance group, which could be due to its predicting accuracy. Dynamic Nelson-Siegel model overall does not show strong competitive ability against functional models (mainly PF and EK). In conclusion, intuition behind this hedging strategy is attributed to risk premium generated by corrected futures basis value prediction.

For better description of how trading activity makes difference when future basis is correctedly forecasted, strategy cumulative returns are plotted for the purpose of showing variance reduction idea and significant trading return in figure 4.6.

Figure 4.6: Futures Contracts based New Trading Strategy Performance



Note: this figure plots the forecasting error in terms of maturity level for all models (Functional Predictive Factors (PF), Functional Estimated Kernel (EK), Functional Naive Model (Naive), Functional Random Walk (RW) and Dynamic Nelson-Siegel (DNS)) across out-of-sample period from 01/01/1999 to 31/12/2016, daily frequency with 1 day forecasting horizon. Forecasting error is calculated based on Function Root Mean Square Error Method (FRMSE) described in methodology part. Results are shown with X-Axis standing for smoothed maturity level and Y-Axis standing for FRMSE level.

Evidence is clear to document across all panels and all maturities. Compared with simple holding strategy, all forecasted futures basis based trading strategies have significant impact on return volatility reduction, witnessed by less volatile and stable return series. Meanwhile, PF model based trading strategies present non-trivial return across both time and maturity dimensions against other models. With maturity up to 3 months, PF forecasted futures basis based trading strategy shows incomparable return at each maturity point.

Another interesting point for this strategy is focused on the financial crisis period 2008 when the simple holding strategy cumulative return series experienced the biggest drop, while the new trading strategy on the contrary magnifies their returns quickly. This is supported by observing a slight return jump for each PF line in all panels, even though this becomes less visible as maturity goes longer. Trivial cumulative returns are recorded for other model suggesting trading strategies given the fact that all cumulative return lines are under the benchmark model along the whole out-of-sample period. This is also consistent due to their large forecasting error observed before.

To robust check trading application results, inspired by Goulas and Skiadopoulos (2012), trading strategy is further tested when transaction cost is taken into account following Locke and Venkatesh (1997) with per trade cost 0.066%. Computation is repeated for each maturity based trading application and results are reported in table 4.10.

Comparing with table 4.9, where no transaction cost is embedded, table 4.10 shows that the maximum cost for transaction in real trading strategy is around 12% return annually, reducing 40% annual mean return to 28% when cost is added on the shortest time-to-maturity contract. Risk adjusted compensation is still attractive peaking at 5.44 after cost control. EK method has a relatively less return drop by around 7% at short time-to-maturity contract trading. For maturity larger than 5 months, strategy returns have been wiped out completely and even negative afterwards.

Table 4.10: Performance of Trading Strategy with Transaction Cost on Individual Maturity Level

	Maturity.1	Maturity.2	Maturity.3	Maturity.4	Maturity.5	Maturity.6	Maturity.7	Maturity.8	Maturity.9	Maturity.10	Maturity.11	Maturity.12	Maturity.13	Maturity.14	Maturity.15	Maturity.16	Maturity.17	Maturity.18	Maturity.19
Panel A: Simple Holding Return																			
Mean	0.06	0.06	0.06	0.06	0.06	0.06	0.06	0.06	0.07	0.07	0.07	0.07	0.07	0.07	0.07	0.07	0.07	0.07	0.07
StDev	0.37	0.34	0.33	0.31	0.31	0.30	0.29	0.28	0.28	0.27	0.27	0.26	0.26	0.26	0.25	0.25	0.25	0.24	0.24
Sharp ratio	0.16	0.17	0.19	0.20	0.21	0.21	0.22	0.23	0.24	0.24	0.25	0.25	0.26	0.26	0.27	0.27	0.27	0.28	0.28
SortinoRatio 0%	0.01	0.02	0.02	0.02	0.02	0.02	0.02	0.02	0.02	0.02	0.02	0.02	0.02	0.02	0.02	0.02	0.02	0.02	0.02
OmegaRatio	0.03	0.03	0.03	0.04	0.04	0.04	0.04	0.04	0.04	0.04	0.04	0.05	0.05	0.05	0.05	0.05	0.05	0.05	0.05
99% VaR(Cornish-Fisher)	-0.08	-0.07	-0.07	-0.06	-0.06	-0.06	-0.06	-0.06	-0.06	-0.05	-0.05	-0.05	-0.05	-0.05	-0.05	-0.05	-0.05	-0.05	-0.05
maxDrawdown	0.90	0.88	0.87	0.86	0.85	0.85	0.84	0.84	0.84	0.83	0.83	0.82	0.82	0.81	0.81	0.81	0.81	0.80	0.80
% of positive months	0.49	0.49	0.49	0.50	0.50	0.50	0.50	0.50	0.50	0.50	0.50	0.50	0.50	0.50	0.50	0.50	0.50	0.50	0.50
Panel B: PF Implied Strategy Return																			
Mean	0.28	0.13	0.07	0.04	0.02	0.00	-0.01	-0.01	-0.02	-0.02	-0.02	-0.02	-0.02	-0.02	-0.03	-0.02	-0.02	-0.03	-0.01
StDev	0.05	0.03	0.02	0.03	0.02	0.02	0.02	0.02	0.02	0.02	0.02	0.02	0.02	0.02	0.02	0.03	0.02	0.02	0.03
Sharp ratio	5.44	3.85	2.91	1.63	0.85	0.09	-0.45	-0.50	-0.99	-1.07	-1.34	-0.78	-1.23	-1.08	-1.20	-0.87	-1.45	-1.43	-0.45
SortinoRatio 0%	1.53	0.66	0.44	0.22	0.12	0.01	-0.05	-0.05	-0.11	-0.12	-0.13	-0.10	-0.14	-0.15	-0.14	-0.13	-0.16	-0.14	-0.09
OmegaRatio	3.65	1.46	0.83	0.50	0.22	0.02	-0.09	-0.10	-0.21	-0.23	-0.26	-0.21	-0.28	-0.31	-0.36	-0.32	-0.36	-0.37	-0.19
99% VaR(Cornish-Fisher)	-0.02	-0.11	-0.01	-0.04	-0.02	-0.03	-0.01	-0.01	-0.01	-0.02	-0.02	-0.01	-0.01	-0.00	-0.06	-0.00	-0.01	-0.05	-0.00
maxDrawdown	0.08	0.09	0.07	0.14	0.15	0.24	0.27	0.27	0.37	0.38	0.35	0.36	0.38	0.44	0.45	0.46	0.40	0.39	0.37
% of positive months	0.63	0.57	0.54	0.52	0.51	0.50	0.49	0.48	0.47	0.48	0.48	0.49	0.48	0.47	0.46	0.45	0.46	0.46	0.46
Panel C: EK Implied Strategy Return																			
Mean	0.15	0.08	0.04	0.03	0.02	0.01	-0.00	0.00	-0.00	-0.01	-0.01	-0.01	-0.02	-0.01	-0.02	-0.01	-0.02	-0.02	-0.02
StDev	0.06	0.04	0.03	0.03	0.02	0.02	0.02	0.02	0.02	0.02	0.02	0.02	0.02	0.02	0.02	0.03	0.02	0.02	0.03
Sharp ratio	2.68	2.26	1.59	1.04	0.69	0.42	-0.11	0.03	-0.19	-0.43	-0.52	-0.47	-0.98	-0.58	-0.92	-0.55	-0.95	-0.95	-0.53
SortinoRatio 0%	0.36	0.29	0.18	0.12	0.08	0.04	-0.01	0.00	-0.02	-0.04	-0.05	-0.05	-0.08	-0.08	-0.08	-0.08	-0.10	-0.09	-0.05
OmegaRatio	0.90	0.62	0.37	0.27	0.17	0.10	-0.02	0.01	-0.04	-0.10	-0.11	-0.13	-0.23	-0.18	-0.29	-0.21	-0.26	-0.26	-0.23
99% VaR(Cornish-Fisher)	-0.03	-0.01	-0.01	-0.05	-0.03	-0.05	-0.02	-0.01	-0.02	-0.03	-0.01	-0.09	-0.09	-0.13	-0.16	-0.00	-0.03	-0.06	-0.19
maxDrawdown	0.07	0.09	0.09	0.10	0.12	0.16	0.19	0.19	0.25	0.26	0.27	0.28	0.28	0.34	0.34	0.38	0.31	0.31	0.30
% of positive months	0.55	0.55	0.54	0.54	0.54	0.55	0.55	0.54	0.54	0.53	0.53	0.53	0.53	0.51	0.51	0.50	0.51	0.50	0.51
Panel D: RW Implied Strategy Return																			
Mean	0.02	0.02	0.00	0.01	0.00	0.00	0.00	-0.00	-0.00	0.01	-0.00	0.00	-0.00	0.01	-0.00	0.01	0.00	0.00	0.00
StDev	0.06	0.04	0.03	0.03	0.02	0.02	0.02	0.02	0.02	0.02	0.01	0.02	0.02	0.02	0.02	0.03	0.02	0.02	0.03
Sharp ratio	0.34	0.43	0.02	0.24	0.00	0.08	0.02	-0.14	-0.13	0.31	-0.03	0.12	-0.01	0.49	-0.02	0.33	0.21	0.06	0.03
SortinoRatio 0%	0.04	0.05	0.00	0.03	0.00	0.01	0.00	-0.01	-0.01	0.04	-0.00	0.01	-0.00	0.09	-0.00	0.06	0.03	0.01	0.00
OmegaRatio	0.09	0.10	0.00	0.06	0.00	0.02	0.00	-0.03	-0.04	0.10	-0.01	0.05	-0.00	0.24	-0.01	0.21	0.09	0.03	0.02
99% VaR(Cornish-Fisher)	-0.05	-0.01	-0.02	-0.04	-0.16	-0.03	-0.02	-0.05	-0.09	-0.01	-0.03	-0.13	-0.13	-0.01	-0.19	-0.01	-0.02	-0.07	-0.21
maxDrawdown	0.16	0.08	0.06	0.05	0.05	0.06	0.05	0.07	0.06	0.05	0.05	0.05	0.04	0.04	0.07	0.07	0.05	0.07	0.07
% of positive months	0.47	0.47	0.47	0.47	0.47	0.47	0.47	0.47	0.47	0.48	0.48	0.48	0.48	0.49	0.48	0.49	0.48	0.48	0.48
Panel E: DNS Implied Strategy Return																			
Mean	-0.05	-0.10	-0.07	-0.07	-0.07	-0.07	-0.07	-0.07	-0.07	-0.06	-0.05	-0.04	-0.04	-0.04	-0.06	-0.06	-0.05	-0.04	-0.02
StDev	0.06	0.04	0.03	0.03	0.02	0.02	0.02	0.02	0.02	0.02	0.02	0.02	0.02	0.02	0.02	0.03	0.02	0.02	0.03
Sharp ratio	-0.88	-2.50	-2.63	-2.51	-2.93	-3.31	-4.13	-4.12	-3.54	-3.11	-3.10	-2.12	-2.61	-1.94	-2.35	-2.40	-3.05	-2.10	-0.83
SortinoRatio 0%	-0.09	-0.22	-0.22	-0.23	-0.28	-0.27	-0.31	-0.33	-0.27	-0.25	-0.26	-0.22	-0.25	-0.18	-0.25	-0.23	-0.26	-0.22	-0.11
OmegaRatio	-0.19	-0.41	-0.41	-0.45	-0.49	-0.53	-0.57	-0.58	-0.58	-0.55	-0.52	-0.48	-0.52	-0.50	-0.58	-0.62	-0.61	-0.49	-0.34
99% VaR(Cornish-Fisher)	-0.05	-0.02	-0.01	-0.05	-0.04	-0.05	-0.02	-0.02	-0.07	-0.07	-0.01	-0.04	-0.03	-0.14	-0.06	-0.16	-0.06	-0.02	-0.02
maxDrawdown	0.64	0.83	0.73	0.71	0.71	0.72	0.75	0.74	0.71	0.66	0.59	0.59	0.58	0.58	0.67	0.73	0.63	0.51	0.47
% of positive months	0.40	0.38	0.40	0.39	0.39	0.39	0.39	0.38	0.40	0.40	0.41	0.41	0.41	0.41	0.39	0.38	0.40	0.42	0.44

Note: performance of trading strategy with transaction cost is taken into account on crude oil futures contracts from 16/04/1999 to 27/10/2016 in daily frequency. In this table, panels (A, B, C, D and E) describe forecasting models (Simple holding return for comparison, PF, EK, RW and DNS model sequentially ordered) respectively and first row standing for different time-to-maturity. Transaction cost is calculated based on (Locke and Venkatesh, 1997), per trade is 0.066%. For each panel, descriptive statistics are listed on the first column with Mean is annualized, StDev (standard deviation), Sharp ratio (mean adjusted to standard deviation), SortinoRatio (mean adjusted to downside deviation with minimum acceptable return is 0), OmegaRatio (probability weighted sharp ratio), VaR (Cornish-Fisher adjusted 99% Value at Risk), % of positive months (percentage of positive return in portfolio series).

RW method has no change which might due to less variation on the signal generation. DNS method results are showing all negative annual returns when transaction cost is controlled. This is mainly due to frequent trading direction changing on long and short, pointing out its instability, caused by unstable futures basis forecasted value.

Overall, the new trading application concludes that forecast magnitude of forecasted futures basis from PF method has the highest accuracy. This magnitude consideration has non trivial effect on the real world economic investment decision. Based on this new trading strategy proposal, purely relying on the accuracy of forecasted futures basis risk premium generation, functional forecasting method in general has better performance than non-functional method. In details, functional predictive factors and functional estimated kernel method are outperforming other models with remarkable returns recording, especially on the short time-to-maturity contracts. These significant annual returns are mainly due to larger variation on the short time-to-maturity contract and forecasting accuracy.

4.5 Conclusion

Crude oil futures basis term structure forecasting via the functional predictive factors (PF in the following content) method shows competitive merits among other benchmark models (the functional estimated kernel, functional naive, functional random walk and Dynamic Nelson-Siegel models) proposed in the literature. In general, PF model, overall, has the lowest forecasting error value for all maturities up to 19 months. Over the past 16 years, 16/04/1999 to 27/10/2016, forecasting error dynamics are stable from PF model while certain extreme significant errors are witnessed for other models. From the idea of forecasting curve shape preserving, PF outperforms other candidate models for different maturities lengths consideration, although functional naive approach tends to be the best model on the shape holding.

Model Confidence Set, equipped with different loss functions (root mean square error and mean absolute error from the forecasting side, maximum drawdown and downside deviation from the trading strategy side), indicates that PF method has strong advantages on the short time-to-maturity (normally less than 10 months) forecasting ability. For the longer maturity, the best way to predict the futures basis is by simply looking at the past observation, named functional naive approach.

Following the backwardation theory, trading strategies given the signal generated from the forecasted futures basis shows that PF method has the best performance, beating the market holding returns. This is mainly due to individual contract sign matching. Extending futures contract trading with the variance minimization idea, this study successfully captures the forecasted risk premium from long and short position on two futures contracts simultaneously. Results suggest the best performance from PF method, with annualized average return 40% and 28% before and after taking transaction cost into consideration separately. Sharpe ratio is also achieved and marked at the highest level 7.92 and 5.44 respectively. This is mainly because forecasted futures basis has the most forecast accuracy in PF method.

Overall, PF method with rolling window forecasting procedure successfully generate less forecasting error statically and dynamically. It also provides the best shape matching on both time-series and cross-sectional dimension. Backwardation supported trading strategy suggested by PF method outperform both simple buy-and-hold return and all other candidates. This success continues for new proposed variance minimisation trading strategy in which remarkably return and Sharpe ratio are recorded for PF model.

Chapter 5

Conclusions, Limitations and Future Researches

All current findings in this thesis are summarized here for a comprehensive conclusion, which is followed by some discussions on potential limitations from both data and model perspectives and some ideas on future research possibilities.

5.1 Conclusions

In the past decades, witnessed by the remarkable performance of investing in futures market with annualised return 12.2% and low correlation with equity market roughly -0.03 since 1969, see (Erb and Harvey, 2005, Gorton and Rouwenhorst, 2004 and Bhardwaj et al., 2015), doing academic and practical research on commodity futures becomes more attractive. The CAPM model (Sharpe, 1964, Lintner, 1965 and Mossin, 1966), originally introduced to explain the asset movement in the equity market, fails to tell the story behind the futures market movement (Jagannathan, 1985 and Erb and Harvey, 2005).

The strong market segmentation evidence between equity and futures market is documented. More specifically, market backwardation (contango) and hedging pressure theory, not from equity market, successfully capture the futures market movement. Under the asset pricing framework, above theories are transferred to risk factors pricing relation that *term structure*, *hedging pressure* as well as *momentum* constitutes the baseline pricing model of futures market. For these researches details, studies are referred to (Koijen et al., 2013, Erb and Harvey, 2005, Szymanowska et al., 2014, Bessembinder, 1992, De Roon et al., 2000 and Basu and Miffre, 2013).

Far more than this baseline model, new factors, e.g. idiosyncratic volatility from Fuertes et al. (2015), co-skewness factor from (Junkus, 1991 and Christie-David and Chaudhry, 2001) and realised skewness factor from (Fernandez-Perez et al., 2018) become prevalent recently. Among these, skewness factor is firstly argued by investment skewness preference idea in the literature via the CAPM framework Arditti and Levy (1975) as well as behaviour finance idea from Kraus and Litzenberger (1976). They state that investors incline to select positively skewed assets in their portfolio holdings as they expect extreme positive return compensation.

Inspired by the recent promising risk-neutral moments estimator pricing ability in the equity market, this thesis first introduces the Risk-Neutral Skewness into the global commodity futures asset pricing frame. The pricing mechanisms are well discussed for the sake of accommodating the commodity futures market. Specifically, the theories of demand-based option pricing theory (Garleanu et al., 2009 and Bollen and Whaley, 2004), heterogeneous belief idea (Friesen et al., 2012 and Han, 2008) and selective hedging (Stulz, 1996) demonstrate the pricing transmission process underneath.

In addition to this single time-series assets data variation explanation study, term structure (the daily observations given different maturities) modelling, is also taken into account in this thesis. This thesis first tests the current prevalent term structure modelling method in literature, namely the Dynamics Nelson-Siegel model. Followed the functional data change point detection procedure frame from Horváth and Kokoszka (2012) and motivated by the recent projection test method by Bardsley et al. (2017), a new test statistics is proposed with well discussion on its asymptotic property, simulation and empirical studies.

Since the current proposal requires some pre-determined factors to project the functional observations, three factors from the Dynamic Nelson-Siegel model are selected. This is because this specific model has widely acceptance in the literature and clear economic interpretation behind. After identifying the model instability (mean change) in the Dynamic Nelson-Siegel three factors, this thesis moves further with novel idea of using functional autoregressive model to predict term structure dynamics.

Rather than dealing with the return data (normally in time-series data) and the term structure price data (Dynamic Nelson-Siegel model suggest, see GrØnborg and Lunde (2016), Baruník and Malinska (2016) and Karstanje et al. (2017) in futures literature), futures basis term structure (standard futures basis with calculation applied on all maturities calculation) acts as the research interest due to its strong connection to backwardation and contango theory. This thesis then uses a more natural functional autoregressive model to fit and predict the term structure data futures basis.

To sum up, in general, there are several new contributions to the global futures market literature from different perspectives. Each part of this thesis is strongly connected with data modelling and term structure related theories' understanding. By the meaning of it, data modelling has three branches: (1) whether the new factor is superior to the term structure factor, (2) term structure price modelling and (3) testing and term structure futures basis fitting and forecasting. Each part is closely concerned on the market backwardation and contango theory. In the meantime, methods employed are spanning from asset pricing, statistical inference and functional data process modelling.

In the first part, a new common risk factor, Risk-Neutral Skewness, is statistically documented on the global futures market under the asset pricing framework. Given the estimation process on the options market data from 2007 to 2016, Risk-Neutral Skewness does positively price the future return at least during the past 10 years.

Time-series factor exposure analysis states that the Risk-Neutral Skewness offers an extra 14.6% annual return when considering all the traditional baseline factors (e.g. term structure, momentum and hedging pressure). Practically, the new proposed Risk-Neutral Skewness does superior to both the traditional risk factors and its counterparts, the realised skewness estimated from the past historical data. Trading strategy by longing the highest Risk-Neutral Skewness group assets and shorting the lowest Risk-Neutral Skewness group assets, points out the most attractive risk adjusted performance measure, sharp at 1.39.

In the second part, research interest moves onto the futures price term structure modelling test. Modelling on the term structure price in futures market has obtained less attention and most of completed studies have focused on the extensions of the Dynamic Nelson-Siegel Model (a model is originally proposed to handle yield curve data fitting problem). Although there are similarities between these two markets data pattern, but some heterogeneous characteristics accounts, for example, seasonality effect, cost of carry, underlying demand and supply effect are somehow unique in the commodity futures market.

For testing the Dynamic Nelson-Siegel modelling stability, a new statistics is developed on detecting term structure modelling uncertainty (term structure mean change). This new testing procedure naturally refers to functional frame with well discussion on its asymptotic behaviour with proof and simulation analysis. Testing power under the alternative case (term structure mean indeed changes in the simulated sample) shows descent results and certain consistence with the literature.

The empirical testing procedure is then applied on the futures market (crude oil and gold term structure price data), indicating the existence of a real change point during the recent financial crisis period. Multivariate forecasting regression is applied on the Dynamic Nelson-Siegel three factors sample data before and after change point to figure out the driving force behind the change.

With the market participators' trading position data from the Commodity Futures Trading Commission (CFTC), long only trading position data on *Producers* (market participators who produce the physical commodity products) statistically stabilise the market volatility and contribute market shift to backwardation for gold product. For the crude oil futures market, *Hedgers* and *Speculators* have the same impact.

In the third part, the term structure modelling is moving onto the futures basis, but considering the log price difference on all available maturities' contract at each observation time point. This thesis first uses the functional data analysis method to fit the term structure discrete futures basis data and then uses the functional autoregressive predictive factor method to forecast its dynamics.

The empirical data analysis via the crude oil futures market data shows that functional predictive factor model outperforms other functional models (e.g. functional principal component analysis or estimated kernel method) and non-functional method (e.g. the Dynamic Nelson-Siegel). The new method superiority is obtained by comparing the forecasting error, term structure shape forecast preserving, trading strategy economical intuition as well as further variance minimization strategy performance (an intra-contract trading strategy with trading signal conditional on forecasted futures basis).

5.2 Limitations and Future Researches

In terms of global commodity futures market asset pricing, Risk-Neutral Skewness estimation may potentially automatically introduce bias. One potential limitation could be the usage of Black-Scholes model when converting between market price and implied volatility mutually as Black does not truly reflect the real market data modelling. Data curve fitting process via natural and hermite cubic spline may not account for the day-to-day dynamics pattern. There might be a potential change on the fitting method, say today spline method works while tomorrow linear method works. This thesis tries to control this influence on final results with other fitting method robustness test, however, it is still worth mentioning that data mining might exists somehow.

Another potential limit is due to market data capacity as options in commodity futures market is not as active as equity and foreign exchange market. Given the filtration setting in the second chapter, errors may generate when filtered market data is too sparse (e.g. observed points have large interval). Utilising further high frequency option data could be a potential way as risk-neutral moments curve is able to be constructed and then fitting method can apply to obtain specific values.

In addition to some limits in the risk-neutral moments estimation procedure, from the view of further potential research possibilities, one extension can be conducted is to analyse the role of difference between the Risk-Neutral Skewness and the realised skewness or more generally the spread between model-free moments and historical moments in the global futures market.

Since the risk-neutral moments are estimated in terms of market participators' risk homogeneity and forward-looking idea, its distance relative to historical moments can reflect market participators' expectation correction value. Pricing this differential can be potential further works, which is inspired by Kozhan et al. (2013) who argue that trading the differential between risk-neutral moments and realised moments can be interpreted as purchasing forward look moment movement with financing from historical moment value, like swap products. Rather than copying their intuition, this differential value can be referred to heterogeneous belief effect or another idiosyncratic factor risk premium.

On another hand, the historical moments can be modelled in order to accommodate forecasting property. Under this framework, with proper forecasting models (e.g. expected skewness calculation procedure (Boyer et al., 2010)), it is able to introduce the differential between risk-neutral moments and model forecasted moments as model interpretation error or model innovation. Modelling either expectation value and innovations can deep the understanding of both risk-neutral moments behaviour and forecasting model dynamics down to their roots and then contribute the literature further.

Regarding the functional mean change detection procedure, there is potential limit on test statistics as current method requires pre-determined orthogonal factors to project. The reason of employing this DNS model projection method refers to this model advantages of economical presentations. It is reasonable to extend the current scope to include more general functional mean change case without selected factors to project for the sake of statistical completeness idea.

Another limit and potential impact on the current model factors, Dynamic Nelson-Siegel, is caused by decaying factor λ. The λ is currently set to be fixed following the literature, however, there is a possibility that λ itself may contain change point. If this is the case, projecting functional curve data on model factors (with parameter λ including change point) will diminish the final testing power.

Therefore, one further work will be the new statistics construction with consideration of change point on λ.

In the line of new statistics proposal, regardless of the effect of λ, new weighted functional mean change statistics is worth exploring. One idea could be the adjustment of the convergence rate while another one is concerned of these projected factors' relative importance. The former one on weight method is applied to all factors while the later one is to put special weight on some selected factors (e.g. market participators may concern more on *"Slope"* factor rather than *"Level"* factor in Dynamic Nelson-Siegel, then new weighting function should be able to accommodate it).

For the term structure futures basis forecasting framework, one limit will be the information abundance embedded in the futures basis calculation. In terms of the futures basis calculation formula, futures basis has involved dynamics from the interest rate, cost of carry, convenience yield and other potential effects. In the current case, these impact on the dynamics of futures basis is ignored by assuming they are synchronised and represented by futures basis only.

One possibility is to isolate the interest rate term structure effect from the current futures basis term structure, in functional meaning, not discrete form. It is worth mentioning that maturities across two markets data need to be adjusted. It is guaranteed that market maturity structure in interest rate is same to that in commodity futures market. The clearer separation to have, the more useful the further dynamics modelling based on functional will be.

Another limit is the number of empirical testing product tested here. Employing crude oil has several concerns with discussion on the fourth chapter data part, but it can be possible to extend the current research to more products testing idea. In the meantime, new forecasting methods, such as the adaptive Dynamics Nelson-Siegel (Chen and Niu, 2014) and functional Dynamics Nelson-Siegel model (Hays et al., 2012), are valuable to do the further test. It is ignored here for the purpose is to compare the performance of functional method with the benchmark and implementing these methods involves high level of complexity both in time and techniques.

Appendices

Appendix A

Risk-Neutral Estimation from BKM Method

$$RNSK(B)_{i,t}(\tau) = \frac{e^{r\tau}W_{i,t}(\tau) - 3\mu_{i,t}(\tau)e^{r\tau}V_{i,t}(\tau) + 2\mu_{i,t}(\tau)^3}{[(e_{r\tau}V_{i,t}(\tau) - \mu_{i,t}(\tau))^2]^{\frac{3}{2}}} \tag{A.0.1}$$

where, $RNSK^{Q}_{i,t}(\tau)$ is the risk-neutral measure of skewness of underlying i at time t with τ maturity. $V_{i,t}(\tau)$, $W_{i,t}(\tau)$ and $X_{i,t}(\tau)$ are the time t prices of τ maturity quadratic, cubic and quartic contracts, respectively. r is the risk-free rate, which is three-month treasury bill.

$$V_{i,t}(\tau) = \int_{S_{i,t}}^{\infty} \frac{2(1 - ln(\frac{K_i}{S_{i,t}}))}{K_i^2} C_{i,t}(\tau, K_i)dK_i + \int_{0}^{S_{i,t}} \frac{2(1 + ln(\frac{S_{i,t}}{K_i}))}{K_i^2} P_{i,t}(\tau, K_i)dK_i, \tag{A.0.2}$$

$$W_{i,t}(\tau) = \int_{S_{i,t}}^{\infty} \frac{6(ln(\frac{K_i}{S_{i,t}}) - 3(ln(\frac{K_i}{S_{i,t}}))^2}{K_i^2} C_{i,t}(\tau, K_i)dK_i - \int_{0}^{S_{i,t}} \frac{(6ln(\frac{S_{i,t}}{K_i}) + 3(ln(\frac{S_{i,t}}{K_i})))^2}{K_i^2} P_{i,t}(\tau, K_i)dK_i, \tag{A.0.3}$$

$$X_{i,t}(\tau) = \int_{S_{i,t}}^{\infty} \frac{12(ln((\frac{K_i}{S_{i,t}})^2 - 4(ln(\frac{K_i}{S_{i,t}}))^3)}{K_i^2} C_{i,t}(\tau, K_i)dK_i + \int_0^{S_{i,t}} \frac{12(ln((\frac{S_{i,t}}{K_i})^2 + 4(ln(\frac{S_{i,t}}{K_i}))^3)}{K_i^2} P_{i,t}(\tau, K_i)dK_i, \tag{A.0.4}$$

$$\mu_{i,t}(\tau) = e^{r\tau} - 1 - e^{r\tau}V_{i,t}(\tau)/2 - e^{r\tau}W_{i,t}(\tau)/6 - e^{r\tau}X_{i,t}(\tau)/24, \tag{A.0.5}$$

where, $C_{i,t}(\tau, K_i)$ and $P_{i,t}(\tau, K_i)$ are the time t prices of European out-of-money calls and puts written on the underlying product with strike price K and expiration τ periods from time t, $S_{i,t}$ is the i^{th} underlying security's price, in the commodity future market, standardized nearest to maturity contract price is a proxy variable.

Appendix B

Functional Change Point Detection Theorem Proof

B.1 Proof of Theorem 3.1

It is easy to see that

$$\sum_{\ell=1}^{m} \mathbf{z}_{\ell} - \frac{m}{N} \sum_{\ell=1}^{N} \mathbf{z}_{\ell} = \sum_{\ell=1}^{m} \left(\mathbf{z}_{\ell} - E\left(\mathbf{z}_{\ell}\right)\right) - \frac{m}{N} \sum_{\ell=1}^{N} \left(\mathbf{z}_{\ell} - E\left(\mathbf{z}_{\ell}\right)\right) + \sum_{\ell=1}^{m} E\left(\mathbf{z}_{\ell}\right) + \frac{m}{N} \sum_{\ell=1}^{N} E\left(\mathbf{z}_{\ell}\right), \tag{B.1.1}$$

the equation (3.3.21) implies that

$$\max_{1 \le m \le N} N^{-\frac{1}{2}} \left\| \sum_{\ell=1}^{m} \left(\mathbf{z}_{\ell} - E\left(\mathbf{z}_{\ell}\right)\right) - \frac{m}{N} \sum_{\ell=1}^{N} \left(\mathbf{z}_{\ell} - E\left(\mathbf{z}_{\ell}\right)\right) \right\| = Op\left(1\right) \tag{B.1.2}$$

and the equation (3.3.16) or (3.3.17) yields that,

$$\max_{1 \le m \le N} N^{-\frac{1}{2}} \left\| \sum_{\ell=1}^{m} E\left(\mathbf{z}_{\ell}\right) + \frac{m}{N} \sum_{\ell=1}^{N} E\left(\mathbf{z}_{\ell}\right) \right\| \xrightarrow{P} \infty, \tag{B.1.3}$$

The proof of **THEOREM 3.1** is complete.

B.2 Proof of Theorem 3.2

It is following the equation (3.3.16) that

$$\begin{aligned}\mathbf{K}_N(t,m,x) &= (m-t)^{-\frac{1}{2}}\left(\sum_{\ell=t+1}^{\lfloor (m-t)x\rfloor+t}\mathbf{z}_\ell-\frac{\lfloor (m-t)x\rfloor}{(m-t)}\sum_{\ell=t+1}^{m}\mathbf{z}_\ell\right)\\ &= (m-t)^{-\frac{1}{2}}\left(\sum_{\ell=t+1}^{\lfloor (m-t)x\rfloor+t}(\mathbf{z}_\ell-E(\mathbf{z}_\ell))-\frac{\lfloor (m-t)x\rfloor}{(m-t)}\sum_{\ell=t+1}^{m}(\mathbf{z}_\ell-E(\mathbf{z}_\ell))\right)\\ &\qquad +\mathbf{g}_N(t,m,x), \quad \text{(B.2.1)}\end{aligned}$$

with,

$$\mathbf{g}_N(t,m,x) = (m-t)^{-\frac{1}{2}}\left(\sum_{\ell=t+1}^{\lfloor (m-t)x\rfloor+t}E(\mathbf{z}_\ell)+\frac{\lfloor (m-t)x\rfloor}{(m-t)}\sum_{\ell=t+1}^{m}E(\mathbf{z}_\ell)\right) \quad \text{(B.2.2)}$$

for all $1\le t<m\le N$. Since the following equation is satisfied,

$$\sup_{0\le x\le 1}(m-t)^{-\frac{1}{2}}\left\|\left(\sum_{\ell=t+1}^{\lfloor (m-t)x\rfloor+t}(\mathbf{z}_\ell-E(\mathbf{z}_\ell))-\frac{\lfloor (m-t)x\rfloor}{(m-t)}\sum_{\ell=t+1}^{m}(\mathbf{z}_\ell-E(\mathbf{z}_\ell))\right)\right\| = Op(1) \quad \text{(B.2.3)}$$

therefore, it is easy to see that for all $1\le t<m\le N$, $\|\mathbf{g}_N(t,m,x)\|^2$ is 0 or a sequence of monotonic broken lines. The function $\|\mathbf{g}_N(t,m,x)\|^2=0$ if and only if there is no change point between the t^{th} and m^{th} sample observation. Under the condition of the equation (3.3.17), if there is a change point between $\lfloor Na\rfloor$ and $\lfloor Nb\rfloor$ for $0\le a<b\le 1$, then,

$$\sup_{0\le 1}\left\|\mathbf{g}_N(\lfloor Na\rfloor,\lfloor Nb\rfloor,x)\right\|\to\infty, \quad \text{(B.2.4)}$$

For the sake of simplicity, assuming the $R=3$ and combing the equation (B.2.2) and (B.2.3), it is able to conclude that the first step will find a change point $\hat{r}_1$ and this estimate is close to one of change points. Following the argument in Bardsley et al. (2017), it is easy to obtain that $K_N(0,\hat{r}_1)$

and $K_N(\hat{r}_1, N)$ are asymptotically independent. If there is at least one change point between the first and the $\hat{r}_1^{th}$ observation, one must be found on the account of equation (B.2.2) and (B.2.3). If there is no change point on the interval of $[1, \hat{r}_1]$, a change might be found but this probability is less than α asymptotically. If change is found, locating the time of change can result in the subsets $[1, \hat{r}_2]$ and $[\hat{r}_2 + 1, \hat{r}_1]$. And then the following step will test change on this interval, so continuing in this case will identify at least R change points with probability closing to 1. Finding k ”artificial change points” cannot have larger probability than α^k due to the asymptotic independence of the statistics on non-overlapping.

B.3 Proof of Theorem 3.3

Following the statement from the equation (B.2.2) and (B.2.3), the estimates for the existing change points are close to the points where the function $\|\mathbf{g}_N(t,m,x)\|$ will take its largest value. Note that $\|\mathbf{g}_N(t,m,x)\|$ is small at "artificial change points", e.g. where committing an error rejecting for H_0. It followings from equation (B.2.2) and (B.2.3) that the estimate where the corresponding test statistics is large, close to a change point and difference between them is bounded by $OP(N)$. This is the statement in **THEOREM 3.3**.

References

Alizadeh, A. and Nomikos, N. (2004), 'A markov regime switching approach for hedging stock indices', *Journal of Futures Markets* **24**(7), 649–674.

Amaya, D., Christoffersen, P., Jacobs, K. and Vasquez, A. (2011), Do realized skewness and kurtosis predict the cross-section of equity returns?, Creates research papers, Department of Economics and Business Economics, Aarhus University.

Amihud, Y. (2002), 'Illiquidity and stock returns: cross-section and time-series effects', *Journal of Financial Markets* **5**(1), 31–56.

Andreasson, P., Bekiros, S., Nguyen, D. K. and Uddin, G. S. (2016), 'Impact of speculation and economic uncertainty on commodity markets', *International Review of Financial Analysis* **43**, 115–127.

Antoniadis, A. and Sapatinas, T. (2003), 'Wavelet methods for continuous-time prediction using hilbert-valued autoregressive processes', *Journal of Multivariate Analysis* **87**(1), 133–158.

Arditti, F. D. and Levy, H. (1975), 'Portfolio efficiency analysis in three moments: The multiperiod case', *The Journal of Finance* **30**(3), 797–809.

Asness, C. S., Moskowitz, T. J. and Pedersen, L. H. (2013), 'Value and momentum everywhere', *The Journal of Finance* **68**(3), 929–985.

Aue, A., Gabrys, R., Horváth, L. and Kokoszka, P. (2009), 'Estimation of a change-point in the mean function of functional data', *Journal of Multivariate Analysis* **100**(10), 2254–2269.

Aue, A., Hörmann, S., Horváth, L., Hušková, M. and Steinebach, J. G. (2012), 'Sequential testing for the stability of high-frequency portfolio betas', *Econometric Theory* **28**(04), 804–837.

Aue, A., Hörmann, S., Horváth, L., Reimherr, M. et al. (2009), 'Break detection in the covariance structure of multivariate time series models', *The Annals of Statistics* **37**(6B), 4046–4087.

Aue, A. and Horváth, L. (2013), 'Structural breaks in time series', *Journal of Time Series Analysis* **34**(1), 1–16.

Bai, J. and Perron, P. (1998), 'Estimating and testing linear models with multiple structural changes', *Econometrica* pp. 47–78.

Bakshi, G., Cao, C. and Chen, Z. (1997), 'Empirical performance of alternative option pricing models', *The Journal of Finance* **52**(5), 2003–2049.

Bakshi, G., Gao, X. and Rossi, A. (2013), 'A better specified asset pricing model to explain the cross-section and time-series of commodity returns', *Unpublished Working Paper, University of Maryland* .

Bakshi, G., Kapadia, N. and Madan, D. (2003), 'Stock return characteristics, skew laws, and the differential pricing of individual equity options', *Review of Financial Studies* **16**(1), 101–143.

Bakshi, G. and Madan, D. (2000), 'Spanning and derivative-security valuation', *Journal of Financial Economics* **55**(02), 205–238.

Bali, T. G. and Murray, S. (2013), 'Does risk-neutral skewness predict the cross-section of equity option portfolio returns?', *Journal of Financial and Quantitative Analysis* **48**, 1145–1171.

Barberis, N. and Huang, M. (2008), 'Stocks as lotteries: The implications of probability weighting for security prices', *The American Economic Review* **98**(5), 2066–2100.

Bardsley, P., Horváth, L., Kokoszka, P. and Young, G. (2017), 'Change point tests in functional factor models with application to yield curves', *The Econometrics Journal* .

Baruník, J. and Malinska, B. (2016), 'Forecasting the term structure of crude oil futures prices with neural networks', *Applied Energy* **164**, 366–379.

Basu, D. and Miffre, J. (2013), 'Capturing the risk premium of commodity futures: The role of hedging pressure', *Journal of Banking & Finance* **37**(7), 2652–2664.

Bates, D. S. (1991), 'The crash of 87: Was it expected? the evidence from options markets', *The Journal of Finance* **46**(3), 1009–1044.

Baxter, J., Conine, T. E. and Tamarkin, M. (1985), 'On commodity market risk premiums: Additional evidence', *Journal of Futures Markets* **5**(1), 121–125.

Benko, M., Härdle, W., Kneip, A. et al. (2009), 'Common functional principal components', *The Annals of Statistics* **37**(1), 1–34.

Berkes, I., Gabrys, R., Horváth, L. and Kokoszka, P. (2009), 'Detecting changes in the mean of functional observations', *Journal of the Royal Statistical Society: Series B (Statistical Methodology)* **71**(5), 927–946.

Besse, P. C., Cardot, H. and Stephenson, D. B. (2000), 'Autoregressive forecasting of some functional climatic variations', *Scandinavian Journal of Statistics* **27**(4), 673–687.

Bessembinder, H. (1992), 'Systematic risk, hedging pressure, and risk premiums in futures markets', *Review of Financial Studies* **5**(4), 637–667.

Bhardwaj, G., Gorton, G. and Rouwenhorst, G. (2015), Facts and fantasies about commodity futures ten years later, Technical report, National Bureau of Economic Research.

Black, F. (1976), 'The pricing of commodity contracts', *Journal of Financial Economics* **3**(1), 167–179.

Black, F. and Scholes, M. (1973), 'The pricing of options and corporate liabilities', *Journal of Political Economy* **81**(3), 637–654.

Bodie, Z. and Rosansky, V. I. (1980), 'Risk and return in commodity futures', *Financial Analysts Journal* **36**(3), 27–39.

Bollen, N. P. and Whaley, R. E. (2004), 'Does net buying pressure affect the shape of implied volatility functions?', *The Journal of Finance* **59**(2), 711–753.

Bosq, D. (2000), *Linear Processes in Function Spaces*, Springer.

Bosq, D. (2012), *Linear processes in function spaces: theory and applications*, Vol. 149, Springer Science & Business Media.

Boyer, B., Mitton, T. and Vorkink, K. (2010), 'Expected idiosyncratic skewness', *Review of Financial Studies* **23**(1), 169–202.

Brunnermeier, M. K., Gollier, C. and Parker, J. A. (2007), Optimal beliefs, asset prices, and the preference for skewed returns, Technical report, National Bureau of Economic Research.

Brunnermeier, M. K., Nagel, S. and Pedersen, L. H. (2008), 'Carry trades and currency crashes', *NBER Macroeconomics Annual* **23**(1), 313–348.

Brunnermeier, M. K. and Parker, J. A. (2005), 'Optimal expectations', *The American Economic Review* **95**(4), 1092–1118.

Büyükşahin, B. and Harris, J. H. (2011), 'Do speculators drive crude oil futures prices?', *The Energy Journal* pp. 167–202.

Carr, P. and Wu, L. (2008), 'Variance risk premiums', *The Review of Financial Studies* **22**(3), 1311–1341.

Carter, C. A., Rausser, G. C. and Schmitz, A. (1983), 'Efficient asset portfolios and the theory of normal backwardation', *Journal of Political Economy* **91**(2), 319–331.

Casassus, J. and Collin D., P. (2005), 'Stochastic convenience yield implied from commodity futures and interest rates', *The Journal of Finance* **60**(5), 2283–2331.

Cecchetti, S. G., Cumby, R. E. and Figlewski, S. (1988), 'Estimation of the optimal futures hedge', *The Review of Economics and Statistics* pp. 623–630.

Chantziara, T. and Skiadopoulos, G. (2008), 'Can the dynamics of the term structure of petroleum futures be forecasted? evidence from major markets', *Energy Economics* **30**(3), 962–985.

Chen, Y.-C., Rogoff, K. S. and Rossi, B. (2010), 'Can exchange rates forecast commodity prices?', *The Quarterly Journal of Economics* **125**(3), 1145–1194.

Chen, Y. and Li, B. (2017), 'An adaptive functional autoregressive forecast model to predict electricity price curves', *Journal of Business & Economic Statistics* pp. 1–18.

Chen, Y. and Niu, L. (2014), 'Adaptive dynamic nelson–siegel term structure model with applications', *Journal of Econometrics* **180**(1), 98–115.

Chib, S. and Kang, K. H. (2012), 'Change-points in affine arbitrage-free term structure models', *Journal of Financial Econometrics* p. nbs004.

Christie-David, R. and Chaudhry, M. (2001), 'Coskewness and cokurtosis in futures markets', *Journal of Empirical Finance* **8**(1), 55 – 81.

Chu, C.-S. J., Stinchcombe, M. and White, H. (1996), 'Monitoring structural change', *Econometrica: Journal of the Econometric Society* pp. 1045–1065.

Conrad, J., Dittmar, R. F. and Ghysels, E. (2013), 'Ex ante skewness and expected stock returns', *The Journal of Finance* **68**(1), 85–124.

Csörgö, M. and Horváth, L. (1997), *Limit theorems in change-point analysis*, Vol. 18, John Wiley & Sons Inc.

Daskalaki, C., Kostakis, A. and Skiadopoulos, G. (2014), 'Are there common factors in individual commodity futures returns?', *Journal of Banking & Finance* **40**, 346–363.

Davis, R. A., Lee, T. C. M. and Rodriguez-Yam, G. A. (2006), 'Structural break estimation for non-stationary time series models', *Journal of the American Statistical Association* **101**(473), 223–239.

De Roon, F. A., Nijman, T. E. and Veld, C. (2000), 'Hedging pressure effects in futures markets', *The Journal of Finance* **55**(3), 1437–1456.

Deaton, A. and Laroque, G. (1992), 'On the behaviour of commodity prices', *The Review of Economic Studies* **59**(1), 1–23.

Dennis, P. and Mayhew, S. (2002), 'Risk-neutral skewness: Evidence from stock options', *Journal of Financial and Quantitative Analysis* **37**(3), 471–493.

Didericksen, D., Kokoszka, P. and Zhang, X. (2012), 'Empirical properties of forecasts with the functional autoregressive model', *Computational Statistics* **27**(2), 285–298.

Diebold, F. X. and Li, C. (2006), 'Forecasting the term structure of government bond yields', *Journal of Econometrics* **130**(2), 337–364.

Diebold, F. X. and Rudebusch, G. D. (2013), *Yield Curve Modeling and Forecasting: The Dynamic Nelson-Siegel Approach*, Princeton University Press.

Dincerler, C., Khoker, X. and Simin, T. T. (2005), 'An empirical analysis of commodity convenience yields', *SSRN Working Paper* pp. 1–46.

Dusak, K. (1973), 'Futures trading and investor returns: An investigation of commodity market risk premiums', *The Journal of Political Economy* pp. 1387–1406.

Ederington, L. H. (1979), 'The hedging performance of the new futures markets', *The Journal of Finance* **34**(1), 157–170.

Ehrhardt, M. C., Jordan, J. V. and Walkling, R. A. (1987), 'An application of arbitrage pricing theory to futures markets: Tests of normal backwardation', *Journal of Futures Markets* **7**(1), 21–34.

Erb, C. B. and Harvey, C. R. (2005), The tactical and strategic value of commodity futures, Working Paper 11222, National Bureau of Economic Research.

Fama, E. F. and French, K. R. (1987), 'Commodity futures prices: Some evidence on forecast power, premiums, and the theory of storage', *The Journal of Business* **60**(1), 55–73.

Fama, E. F. and French, K. R. (1988), 'Business cycles and the behavior of metals prices', *The Journal of Finance* **43**(5), 1075–1093.

Fama, E. F. and French, K. R. (2016), Commodity futures prices: Some evidence on forecast power, premiums, and the theory of storage, *in* 'The World Scientific Handbook of Futures Markets', World Scientific, pp. 79–102.

Fama, E. F. and MacBeth, J. D. (1973), 'Risk, return, and equilibrium: Empirical tests', *The Journal of Political Economy* pp. 607–636.

Fernandez-Perez, A., Frijns, B., Fuertes, A.-M. and Miffre, J. (2018), 'The skewness of commodity futures returns', *Journal of Banking and Finance* **86**(3), 143–158.

Fernandez-Perez, A., Fuertes, A.-M. and Miffre, J. (2017*a*), 'Commodity markets, long-run predictability, and intertemporal pricing', *Review of Finance* **21**(3), 1159–1188.

Fernandez-Perez, A., Fuertes, A.-M. and Miffre, J. (2017*b*), 'Commodity markets, long-run predictability, and intertemporal pricing', *Review of Finance* **21**(3), 1159–1188.

Fong, W. M. and See, K. H. (2003), 'Basis variations and regime shifts in the oil futures market', *The European Journal of Finance* **9**(5), 499–513.

Friesen, G. C., Zhang, Y. and Zorn, T. S. (2012), 'Heterogeneous beliefs and risk-neutral skewness', *Journal of Financial and Quantitative Analysis* **47**(04), 851–872.

Fuertes, A.-M., Miffre, J. and Fernandez-Perez, A. (2015), 'Commodity strategies based on momentum, term structure, and idiosyncratic volatility', *Journal of Futures Markets* **35**(3), 274–297.

Garleanu, N., Pedersen, L. H. and Poteshman, A. M. (2009), 'Demand-based option pricing', *The Review of Financial Studies* **22**(10), 4259–4299.

Ghoddusi, H. and Emamzadehfard, S. (2017), 'Optimal hedging in the u.s. natural gas market: The effect of maturity and cointegration', *Energy Economics* **63**, 92–105.

Gibson, R. and Schwartz, E. S. (1990), 'Stochastic convenience yield and the pricing of oil contingent claims', *The Journal of Finance* **45**(3), 959–976.

Gkionis, K., Kostakis, A., Skiadopoulos, G. S. and Stilger, P. S. (2017), 'Risk-neutral skewness and stock outperformance', *Unpublished working paper* .
URL: *https://ssrn.com/abstract=2981107 or http://dx.doi.org/10.2139/ssrn.2981107*

Gorton, G. B., Hayashi, F. and Rouwenhorst, K. G. (2007), The fundamentals of commodity future returns, Working Paper w13249, National Bureau of Economic Research.

Gorton, G. and Rouwenhorst, K. G. (2004), Facts and fantasies about commodity futures, Working Paper 10595, National Bureau of Economic Research.

Goulas, L. and Skiadopoulos, G. (2012), 'Are freight futures markets efficient? evidence from imarex', *International Journal of Forecasting* **28**(3), 644–659.

Green, T. C. and Hwang, B.-H. (2012), 'Initial public offerings as lotteries: Skewness preference and first-day returns', *Management Science* **58**(2), 432–444.

GrØnborg, N. S. and Lunde, A. (2016), 'Analyzing oil futures with a dynamic nelson-siegel model', *Journal of Futures Markets* **36**(2), 153–173.

Hamilton, J. D. and Wu, J. C. (2014), 'Risk premia in crude oil futures prices', *Journal of International Money and Finance* **42**, 9–37.

Han, B. (2008), 'Investor sentiment and option prices', *Review of Financial Studies* **21**(1), 387–414.

Hansen, L. P. (1982), 'Large sample properties of generalized method of moments estimators', *Econometrica: Journal of the Econometric Society* pp. 1029–1054.

Hansen, P. R., Lunde, A. and Nason, J. M. (2011), 'The model confidence set', *Econometrica* **79**(2), 453–497.

Hansis, A., Schlag, C. and Vilkov, G. (2010), 'The dynamics of risk-neutral implied moments: Evidence from individual options', *Unpublished working paper* .
URL: *https://ssrn.com/abstract=1470674 or http://dx.doi.org/10.2139/ssrn.1470674*

Harvey, C. R. and Siddique, A. (2000), 'Conditional skewness in asset pricing tests', *The Journal of Finance* **55**(3), 1263–1295.

Hautsch, N. and Ou, Y. (2012), 'Analyzing interest rate risk: Stochastic volatility in the term structure of government bond yields', *Journal of Banking & Finance* **36**(11), 2988–3007.

Hays, S., Shen, H., Huang, J. Z. et al. (2012), 'Functional dynamic factor models with application to yield curve forecasting', *The Annals of Applied Statistics* **6**(3), 870–894.

Heidorn, T., Mokinski, F., Rühl, C. and Schmaltz, C. (2015), 'The impact of fundamental and financial traders on the term structure of oil', *Energy Economics* **48**, 276–287.

Hirshleifer, D. (1988), 'Residual Risk, Trading Costs, and Commodity Futures Risk Premia', *Review of Financial Studies* **1**(2), 173–193.

Hirshleifer, D. (1990), 'Hedging pressure and futures price movements in a general equilibrium model', *Econometrica: Journal of the Econometric Society* pp. 411–428.

Hong, H. and Yogo, M. (2012), 'What does futures market interest tell us about the macroeconomy and asset prices?', *Journal of Financial Economics* **105**(3), 473–490.

Hörmann, S., Horváth, L. and Reeder, R. (2013), 'A functional version of the arch model', *Econometric Theory* **29**(02), 267–288.

Hörmann, S., Kokoszka, P. et al. (2010), 'Weakly dependent functional data', *The Annals of Statistics* **38**(3), 1845–1884.

Horváth, L. (1993), 'The maximum likelihood method for testing changes in the parameters of normal observations', *The Annals of statistics* pp. 671–680.

Horváth, L., Hušková, M. and Kokoszka, P. (2010), 'Testing the stability of the functional autoregressive process', *Journal of Multivariate Analysis* **101**(2), 352–367.

Horváth, L. and Kokoszka, P. (2012), *Inference for functional data with applications*, Vol. 200, Springer Science & Business Media.

Horváth, L., Kokoszka, P. and Reeder, R. (2013), 'Estimation of the mean of functional time series and a two-sample problem', *Journal of the Royal Statistical Society: Series B (Statistical Methodology)* **75**(1), 103–122.

Horváth, L., Kokoszka, P. and Reimherr, M. (2009), 'Two sample inference in functional linear models', *Canadian Journal of Statistics* **37**(4), 571–591.

Horváth, L., Kokoszka, P. and Rice, G. (2014), 'Testing stationarity of functional time series', *Journal of Econometrics* **179**(1), 66–82.

Horváth, L. and Rice, G. (2014), 'Extensions of some classical methods in change point analysis', *Test* **23**(2), 219–255.

Horváth, L. and Rice, G. (2015), 'An introduction to functional data analysis and a principal component approach for testing the equality of mean curves', *Revista Matemática Complutense* **28**(3), 505–548.

Irwin, S. H. and Sanders, D. R. (2012), 'Testing the masters hypothesis in commodity futures markets', *Energy economics* **34**(1), 256–269.

Jackwerth, J. C. and Rubinstein, M. (1996), 'Recovering probability distributions from option prices', *The Journal of Finance* **51**(5), 1611–1631.

Jagannathan, R. (1985), 'An investigation of commodity futures prices using the consumption-based intertemporal capital asset pricing model', *The Journal of Finance* **40**(1), 175–191.

Jarque, C. M. and Bera, A. K. (1987), 'A test for normality of observations and regression residuals', *International Statistical Review/Revue Internationale de Statistique* pp. 163–172.

Jiang, G. J. and Tian, Y. S. (2005), 'The model-free implied volatility and its information content', *The Review of Financial Studies* **18**(4), 1305–1342.

Jiang, G. J. and Tian, Y. S. (2007), 'Extracting model-free volatility from option prices: An examination of the vix index', *The Journal of Derivatives* **14**(3), 35–60.

Johnson, L. L. (1960), 'The theory of hedging and speculation in commodity futures', *The Review of Economic Studies* **27**(3), 139–151.

Junkus, J. C. (1991), 'Systematic skewness in futures contracts', *Journal of Futures Markets* **11**(1), 9–24.

Kaldor, N. (1939), 'Speculation and Economic Stability', *Review of Economic Studies* **7**(1), 1–27.

Kargin, V. and Onatski, A. (2008), 'Curve forecasting by functional autoregression', *Journal of Multivariate Analysis* **99**(10), 2508–2526.

Karstanje, D., Van Der Wel, M. and van Dijk, D. J. (2017), 'Common factors in commodity futures curves', *Unpublished Working Paper* .
URL: *https://ssrn.com/abstract=2558014 or http://dx.doi.org/10.2139/ssrn.2558014*

Kesicki, F. (2010), 'The third oil price surge–whats different this time?', *Energy Policy* **38**(3), 1596–1606.

Keynes, J. M. (1930), *A Treatise on Money*, Vol. 2, London: Macmillan.

Kim, T.-H. and White, H. (2004), 'On more robust estimation of skewness and kurtosis', *Finance Research Letters* **1**(1), 56–73.

Koijen, R. S., Moskowitz, T. J., Pedersen, L. H. and Vrugt, E. B. (2013), Carry, Working Paper 19325, National Bureau of Economic Research.

Kokoszka, P. and Reimherr, M. (2013), 'Predictability of shapes of intraday price curves', *The Econometrics Journal* **16**(3), 285–308.

Kolb, R. W. (1992), 'Is normal backwardation normal?', *Journal of Futures Markets* **12**(1), 75–91.

Koopman, S. J., Mallee, M. I. and Van der Wel, M. (2010), 'Analyzing the term structure of interest rates using the dynamic nelson–siegel model with time-varying parameters', *Journal of Business & Economic Statistics* **28**(3), 329–343.

Kozhan, R., Neuberger, A. and Schneider, P. (2013), 'The skew risk premium in the equity index market', *The Review of Financial Studies* **26**(9), 2174–2203.

Kraus, A. and Litzenberger, R. H. (1976), 'Skewness preference and the valuation of risk assets', *The Journal of Finance* **31**(4), 1085–1100.

Lengwiler, Y. and Lenz, C. (2010), 'Intelligible factors for the yield curve', *Journal of Econometrics* **157**(2), 481–491.

Leontsinis, S. and Alexander, C. (2017), 'Arithmetic variance swaps', *Quantitative Finance* **17**(4), 551–569.

Lien, D. (2009), 'A note on the hedging effectiveness of garch models', *International Review of Economics & Finance* **18**(1), 110–112.

Lien, D. and Yang, L. (2008), 'Asymmetric effect of basis on dynamic futures hedging: Empirical evidence from commodity markets', *Journal of Banking & Finance* **32**(2), 187–198.

Lim, K.-G. (1989), 'A new test of the three-moment capital asset pricing model', *Journal of Financial and Quantitative Analysis* **24**, 205–216.

Lintner, J. (1965), 'The valuation of risk assets and the selection of risky investments in stock portfolios and capital budgets', *The Review of Economics and Statistics* **47**(1), 13–37.

Litzenberger, R. H. and Rabinowitz, N. (1995), 'Backwardation in oil futures markets: Theory and empirical evidence', *The Journal of Finance* **50**(5), 1517–1545.

Locke, P. R. and Venkatesh, P. (1997), 'Futures market transaction costs', *Journal of Futures Markets* **17**(2), 229–245.

Marcus, A. J. (1984), 'Efficient asset portfolios and the theory of normal backwardation: A comment', *Journal of Political Economy* **92**(1), 162–164.

Merton, R. C. (1987), 'A simple model of capital market equilibrium with incomplete information', *The Journal of Finance* **42**(3), 483–510.

Miffre, J. and Rallis, G. (2007), 'Momentum strategies in commodity futures markets', *Journal of Banking and Finance* **31**(6), 1863–1886.

Mitton, T. and Vorkink, K. (2007), 'Equilibrium underdiversification and the preference for skewness', *The Review of Financial Studies* **20**(4), 1255–1288.

Monoyios, M. and Sarno, L. (2002), 'Mean reversion in stock index futures markets: A nonlinear analysis', *Journal of Futures Markets* **22**(4), 285–314.

Moskowitz, T. J., Ooi, Y. H. and Pedersen, L. H. (2012), 'Time series momentum', *Journal of Financial Economics* **104**(2), 228 – 250. Special Issue on Investor Sentiment.

Mossin, J. (1966), 'Equilibrium in a capital asset market', *Econometrica: Journal of the Econometric Society* pp. 768–783.

Nelson, C. R. and Siegel, A. F. (1987), 'Parsimonious modeling of yield curves', *Journal of Business* pp. 473–489.

Neuberger, A. (2012), 'Realized skewness', *The Review of Financial Studies* **25**(11), 3423–3455.

Newey, W. K. and West, K. D. (1986), A simple, positive semi-definite, heteroskedasticity and autocorrelation consistent covariance matrix, Working Paper 55, National Bureau of Economic Research.

Newey, W. K. and West, K. D. (1987), 'Hypothesis testing with efficient method of moments estimation', *International Economic Review* pp. 777–787.

Nieh, C.-C., Wu, S. and Zeng, Y. (2010), *Regime shifts and the term structure of interest rates*, Springer.

Nomikos, N. K. and Pouliasis, P. K. (2015), 'Petroleum term structure dynamics and the role of regimes', *Journal of Futures Markets* **35**(2), 163–185.

Ohana, S. (2010), 'Modeling global and local dependence in a pair of commodity forward curves with an application to the us natural gas and heating oil markets', *Energy Economics* **32**(2), 373–388.

Page, E. (1954), 'Continuous inspection schemes', *Biometrika* **41**(1/2), 100–115.

Park, T. H. and Switzer, L. N. (1995), 'Bivariate garch estimation of the optimal hedge ratios for stock index futures: A note', *Journal of Futures Markets* **15**(1), 61–67.

Pindyck, R. S. (1990), Inventories and the short-run dynamics of commodity prices, Working Paper 3295, National Bureau of Economic Research.

Ramsay, J. O. (2006), *Functional data analysis*, Wiley Online Library.

Roll, R., Schwartz, E. and Subrahmanyam, A. (2007), 'Liquidity and the law of one price: the case of the futures-cash basis', *The Journal of Finance* **62**(5), 2201–2234.

Routledge, B. R., Seppi, D. J. and Spatt, C. S. (2000), 'Equilibrium forward curves for commodities', *Journal of Finance* pp. 1297–1338.

Samuelson, P. A. (1965), 'Rational theory of warrant pricing', *IMR; Industrial Management Review (pre-1986)* **6**(2), 13.

Schwartz, E. S. (1997), 'The stochastic behavior of commodity prices: Implications for valuation and hedging', *The Journal of Finance* **52**(3), 923–973.

Schwartz, E. and Smith, J. E. (2000), 'Short-term variations and long-term dynamics in commodity prices', *Management Science* **46**(7), 893–911.

Shanken, J. (1992), 'On the estimation of beta-pricing models', *Review of Financial Studies* **5**(1), 1–33.

Shanken, J. and Zhou, G. (2007), 'Estimating and testing beta pricing models: Alternative methods and their performance in simulations', *Journal of Financial Economics* **84**(1), 40–86.

Sharpe, W. F. (1964), 'Capital asset prices: A theory of market equilibrium under conditions of risk', *The Journal of Finance* **19**(3), 425–442.

Singleton, K. J. (2013), 'Investor flows and the 2008 boom/bust in oil prices', *Management Science* **60**(2), 300–318.

Sørensen, C. (2002), 'Modeling seasonality in agricultural commodity futures', *Journal of Futures Markets* **22**(5), 393–426.

Stilger, P. S., Kostakis, A. and Poon, S.-H. (2016), 'What does risk-neutral skewness tell us about future stock returns?', *Management Science* .

Stock, J. H. and Watson, M. W. (2012), 'Generalized shrinkage methods for forecasting using many predictors', *Journal of Business & Economic Statistics* **30**(4), 481–493.

Stoll, H. R. (1979), 'Commodity futures and spot price determination and hedging in capital market equilibrium', *The Journal of Financial and Quantitative Analysis* **14**(4), 873–894.

Stulz, R. M. (1996), 'Rethinking risk management', *Journal of Applied Corporate Finance* **9**(3), 8–25.

Szymanowska, M., De Roon, F., Nijman, T. and Van Den Goorbergh, R. (2014), 'An anatomy of commodity futures risk premia', *The Journal of Finance* **69**(1), 453–482.

Tomek, W. G. and Peterson, H. H. (2001), 'Risk management in agricultural markets: a review', *Journal of Futures Markets* **21**(10), 953–985.

Triantafyllou, A., Dotsis, G. and Sarris, A. H. (2015), 'Volatility forecasting and time-varying variance risk premiums in grains commodity markets', *Journal of Agricultural Economics* **66**(2), 329–357.

Tversky, A. and Kahneman, D. (1992), 'Advances in prospect theory: Cumulative representation of uncertainty', *Journal of Risk and Uncertainty* **5**(4), 297–323.

Vasicek, O. (1977), 'An equilibrium characterization of the term structure', *Journal of Financial Economics* **5**(2), 177–188.

Working, H. (1949), 'The theory of price of storage', *The American Economic Review* **39**(6), 1254–1262.

Xiang, J. and Zhu, X. (2013), 'A regime-switching nelson–siegel term structure model and interest rate forecasts', *Journal of Financial Econometrics* **11**(3), 522–555.

Yang, F. (2013), 'Investment shocks and the commodity basis spread', *Journal of Financial Economics* **110**(1), 164–184.

Zhu, X. and Rahman, S. (2015), 'A regime-switching nelson–siegel term structure model of the macroeconomy', *Journal of Macroeconomics* **44**, 1–17.